



MURDERING HEAVEN EDGE

BOOK 02

Sharp Knife

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Murdering Heaven Edge

(弑天刃)

by

Sharp Knife

(小刀锋利)

Synopsis

A tyrannical world, raising the sword, a sharp blade covers the heavens with a clear conscious.

All living things are brutal, a sword to murder one's superiors, indifferent to the heavens, holding a blade with a disdainful look.

Passing through a journey as big as the sky, the whole way thistles and thorns.

One blade chops open a path.

I alone am supreme!

Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Delivery Man @ Chinanovel.net,
PurpleNails @ Kitsune Club

Translation Edits by Pelethite, Dedition @ Kitsune Club

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 101: Mighty Domineering Little Black Brother

Everyone was inside Gluttonous Ogre, in the room that was never opened to outsiders. Miao Yiniang and a tall slender beauty sat on one side, Chu Mo and Xu Fufu sat on the other side.

Several exquisite dishes and a pot of warm wine were arranged on the table.

Miao Yiniang appeared happy while looking at Chu Mo and Xu Fufu: “I really didn’t think you two would come back during this time.”

Xu Fufu chuckled: “Why? Are you touched?”

Miao Yiniang nodded. She seemed to smile without smiling at the girl to her side: “Mei’er, aren’t you touched?”

This beautiful girl was the most popular brothel hostess many years ago in Yellow Flame City. She was also the leading lady in the story involving Xu Fufu.....Liu Mei’er

That was already four years ago. That beautiful and talented maiden already grew into an extraordinary graceful alluring beauty. She was called over when Miao Yiniang opened up a Gluttonous Ogre branch, and became the new branch manager.

Because of Liu Mei'er's influence at that time, and the curiosity of people, that new branch was already popular before it opened.

Liu Mei'er also finally stopped living behind closed doors after four years, returning to the eyes of the people. Only this time, practically no one dared take liberties with her.

Everyone knew this beauty is Xu Fufu's exclusive territory.

Liu Mei'er smiled extremely beautifully. Her eyebrows bent like the moon, and her oval shaped face was as clean as jade. Her skin was snowy white, and her starry pupils were full of energy. She somewhat bashfully smiled as she said: "Of course I'm touched."

Miao Yiniang chuckled: "If you are touched, then [devote yourself wholeheartedly](#)."

[TL: She's making a joke here. 'Devote yourself wholeheartedly' can also mean to give sexual favors.]

Xu Fufu held his hand to his forehead. He originally had designs for Miao Yiniang, and never thought she would turn things around. He couldn't help but sadly look at Liu Mei'er: "Look.....if you had gotten with me earlier, would she be teasing you now?"

Liu Mei'er's distinct black and white eyes revealed a trace of a smile. She softly said: "I haven't been with you before?"

Xu Fufu distressfully said: "Everyone in the world thinks I'm your boyfriend. Who would believe that we haven't even held

hands? I'm dying here."

Liu Mei'er softly said: "People say that kind of thing.....shouldn't be done too early. I'm doing this for your good."

Pffft.

Chu Mo and Miao Yiniang both burst out laughing.

Obviously it is not enough to have a beautiful face to be the number one brothel hostess in Yellow Flame City. Don't be fooled by Liu Mei'er's normally shy appearance. The playboy Xu Fufu is no match against her quick-wit.

When facing this, Xu Fufu could only empty his wine cup and look sad.

"Okay, don't be so depressed. My life is your's, and my death..... is also yours....." Liu Mei'er softly looked at Xu Fufu, then she looked to Chu Mo: "I've always thought on how to thank noble son Chu, but there has never been the opportunity. I wish to give noble son Chu a toast today."

Chu Mo reached for a glass: "Mei'er speaks too seriously. When those things happened, I would have been powerless without 2Fu."

Xu Fufu looked pleased with himself: "Did you hear?"

Liu Mei'er gave him a haughty look, then covered her mouth while drinking a cup of wine.

Miao Yiniang looked at Chu Mo, then looked over to Xu Fufu. She somewhat uncertainly asked: "Why do I feel....something is wrong with you two tonight?"

"Are you not happy with us accompanying you for new year's day? What do you mean something is wrong?" Xu Fufu leaned back on his chair and easily spoke.

Miao Yiniang shook her head: "No, you guys should be at the Royal Palace joining the new year's banquet. You shouldn't be in the Gluttonous Ogre right now. Something certainly happened. It's fine if you don't want to talk about it, we will drink."

Chu Mo said: "There's nothing to talk about. I reckon you will hear the stories tomorrow."

Miao Yiniang's clever eyes fell on Chu Mo. Lei Mei'er curiously swept her eyes back and forth between the two.

Xu Fufu said from the side: "Little black brother is extremely bold. He smashed the Prince Mansion gate, causing a ruckus inside and everything.....those are all things in the past. Tonight, he reached a whole other level of boldness."

Miao Yiniang's pair of beautiful eyes immediately showed nervousness: "How?"

Xu Fufu laughed: “I see you’re scared. He shouldn’t be sitting here right?”

“Quickly speak.” Liu Mei’er couldn’t help but harshly speak at Xu Fufu. Perhaps Xu Fufu was a little jealous inside, but his performance didn’t show anything.

Xu Fufu said: “Chu Mo was almost caught in a trap tonight. The Ministry of Works assistant Zhao Yi sent a carriage, apparently not even a fifth rank iron blood realm cultivator could break out of it. The carriage was disguised as the Royal House’s, and picked up little black brother.”

“Heavens.” Miao Yiniang and Liu Mei’er couldn’t help but suck in a cool breath of air.

Chu Mo was comfortably sitting there, but they both felt a cold burst of fear for Chu Mo.

A fifth rank cultivator couldn’t break out. Didn’t that make Chu Mo.....the same as trapped?

“What were they planning?” Rage immediately flashed across Miao Yiniang’s eyes.

Xu Fufu said: “You ask what were they planning? But, Chu Mo is too overwhelmingly powerful. He escaped from the carriage, and carried the driver to the Royal Palace. Then inside the royal family

banquet hall.....he cut off the Ministry of Works assistant Zhao Yi's dog head!"

"Ah?" The two vibrant women appeared sluggish, expressing disbelief.

Xu Fufu told the story in detail for the women. He even talked about the reactions of those high level nobles. He told everything from his perspective, clearly laying out the events of the evening, from the events in the royal banquet hall, until the thrilling scene that took place in the end.

The two women foolishly listened, and stared blankly at Chu Mo.

"You.....you killed the Ministry of Works assistant in front of so many people, then got called away by the emperor, and returned after a short time? How is this nothing?" Miao Yiniang looked at Chu Mo like she was looking at a monster.

The secular world Royal Palace is considered a dragon's den place to most sect disciples.

Because every country, even the small ones, they all have a sect cultivator on guard.

If a sect disciple really views the secular world people as ants, and feels the same way about the Royal Palace, then he will certainly experience an ugly death upon breaking inside.

Miao Yiniang was naturally aware of the terror at the empire's Royal Palace, so she didn't dare believe this is real.

Xu Fufu said: "Is that a big deal? What's even more amazing is this. We left the Royal City, and ran into the three princes at the gate. Our little black brother opposed them to their faces. You all should have seen, it was amazing."

Liu Mei'er was already completely stupefied. She was quite clear on the significance of power because of the experience she went through four years ago. The powerful don't care who you are. Chu Mo should have been crushed. He dared oppose the crowned prince, yet returned intact.....this, this is too inconceivable.

Miao Yiniang looked at Chu Mo, and quietly asked: "My young master, in the end.....what are you planning?"

Chapter 102: Can I Trust You?

Chu Mo scratched his head: “Actually I’m not planning anything. I only want to quietly cultivate, and spend my days happily. It’s a pity, the more simple the idea, the harder it is to accomplish. In order to achieve this goal, I can only try hard to clear away all the obstacles in my path.”

“This includes the crowned prince and the rest?” Miao Yiniang faintly asked.

“Including them.” Chu Mo replied.

“I understand. I will support you!” Miao Yiniang looked to Chu Mo: “No matter what you decide, I will always support you!”

Chu Mo laughed: “I know.”

Soon after, the four started eating new year’s dinner. Chu Mo and Xu Fufu looked at each other when the fireworks started continuously going off outside. They both said in unison: “Fourteen!”

The two teenagers that could easily stir Yellow Flame City were already fourteen, and yet they were only fourteen.

Miao Yiniang and Liu Mei’er raised a glass, and proposed a toast to the two fourteen year olds, congratulating them for turning a year older.

Soon after, several people ran outside to set off fireworks. The two girls in their twenties smiled extremely happily like young maidens

This is how the year passed.

It was already after midnight when Chu Mo returned home. Pretty much no one was on the road. Two red lanterns hung at the gate of the Fan household, lighting up a large amount of area.

Chu Mo felt warm inside when he saw the two red lanterns. He finally returned home.

The gate guards said to Chu Mo upon seeing his return: “Young master, another carriage came right after you left. They said they were taking you to the palace. Were there any problems?”

All the guards in the Fan household, including the gate guards, were retired veterans from the military. Their alertness far exceeded that of ordinary people.

Chu Mo smiled and shook his head: “No problems uncle Qin. Have you had anything to drink tonight?”

The middle-aged man in his forties scratched his head: “I drank a little. It’s the stuff the young maidens that young master brought in gave to me. I must say, the place doesn’t feel the same with this many young girls! It seems we’ve become a grand house all of the

sudden! Hah, they all have maidservants!”

Chu Mo felt touched inside. He smiled: “Does uncle Qin fancy one?”

“How could I, don’t say such things. If I had a daughter, those maidservants would all be younger than her. I only think the General’s house is a little bit more lively than before!” Old Qin gave a simple-minded smile.

No one knew. This man who walked a little lame used to be a fearless killer on the battlefield. He was a brave fearless elite.

Chu Mo patted old Qin’s shoulder: “Uncle Qin, our house will be better and better.”

“Yes, with the young master, it will certainly be good!” Old Qin happily smiled. Soon after, he suddenly thought of something, and said: “Oh! Young master, a girl came searching for you about two hours ago. I said young master isn’t home, and the young girl left.”

“Young girl?” Chu Mo was a little startled.

“Yes, she’s very pretty. She also spoke very politely, like she wasn’t a commoner, and extremely lady-like. But I felt a little strange, why is this daughter of a noble house away from home on a big night like tonight?” Old Qin somewhat curiously mumbled.

“What did she look like?” Chu Mo asked.

“Ah, she is very tall. She has a somewhat rounded oval face and pulled back hair. She was wearing blue colored clothes, and a black cloak. She seemed.....like a warrior.” Old Qin said.

The maiden from that night in the Prince Mansion floated into Chu Mo’s mind. His brows slightly wrinkled, and he thought: ‘Don’t tell me her illness has already flared up?’

Chu Mo said while thinking: “Bring her straight to see me when she returns.”

“Okay.” Old Qin had an expression of ‘I understand’.

Chu Mo gave a haughty look, then walked inside.

Chu Mo’s brows slightly raised when he reached the door to his room. He pushed open the door and went inside without making a sound. Sure enough, the young maiden that tried to assassinate him in the Prince Mansion was sitting there.

Her cape was already stripped off and hanging on the chair, and she was wearing her blue colored gown. She appeared a little shy upon seeing Chu Mo enter. She immediately stood up, then slowly kneeled down, softly saying: “Noble son Chu, I have come asking for help.”

“Stand up and speak.” Chu Mo simply said. He walked towards the stove and started heating up a half-pot of water. He walked

back and sat before the girl without speaking, simply watching her.

“I.....” The girl hesitated, wanting to say something.

Chu Mo waved his hand, and seriously looked at her: “You already decided to leave that person?”

The young girl nodded, and pitifully looked at Chu Mo: “I already left that night. She saved my whole family back then. If it wasn’t for her, my family and I would already be dead. So, she is still a benefactor in my eyes, but she also killed off my family over the years. Now I don’t know whether to appreciate or hate her.”

“Your poison isn’t difficult to cure.” Chu Mo said.

The young girl looked at Chu Mo, and gently bit her lower lip. Blinking her pair of smart eyes, she softly said: “Apart from myself.....I have nothing to offer noble son.”

“It’s not that I need your payment. My hesitation.....is if I can trust you.” Chu Mo simply said.

“If I say now that noble son can trust me, then it’s not very convincing.” The young girl softly spoke, stood up, and started to untie her clothes: “It is best if noble son wants me, then I can be his.....naturally I won’t harm noble son.”

Chu Mo stared at her: “Sit down!”

The maiden was scared back a step, and she sat down feeling a little wronged: “Noble son doesn’t like me. How can he believe me? Could it be.....you need to put poison in me like my former master?”

Chu Mo sneered: “Who do you think I am? You don’t understand my meaning!”

“Please say noble son.” The maiden looked at Chu Mo.

“I promised to cure your poison. This comes without any conditions. Don’t tell me you would perform sexual favors if an eighty year old man helped cure your poison?” Chu Mo angrily looked at her: “Girls need to understand self-respect!”

The maiden was scolded, yet she didn’t get angry. On the contrary, her eyes revealed a trace of happiness. She said: “Noble son is so handsome and skilled. Being noble son’s woman would be my great fortune. If it were someone else, I would die before letting them touch me!”

“Good, but I don’t have that kind of idea towards you.” Chu Mo stood up as he spoke, walked over to the half-pot of water on the stove, and lifted it up, intending to make tea.

The maiden stood up at this time and said: “Let me help.” She took the pot of water from Chu Mo, found some tea leaves, and skillfully soaked it in the water.

Chu Mo sat there silent for a moment. Then he said: “Right now.....I am short on manpower for something. What I am thinking, is whether or not I can trust you to join. As far as the poison, I will help you no matter what.”

[The maiden's](#) eyes brightly lit up when she heard this. Soon after, she slowly knelt before Chu Mo, and seriously spoke: “Young master agrees to help me cure my poison without any conditions. His agreement to take me in is also my good fortune. I swear on my dead family, I will not forsake young master with this life. If I betray you, then may my family in the afterlife be forever restless!”

[TL: She speaks in the third person here. Her name is Yan Zhi in case you forgot.]

Chapter 103: Granting Your Name

This oath is very serious!

Not even extremely evil people can easily make joke about their families. Therefore, Yan Zhi's oath was ever more serious than pledging her own life.

Chu Mo reached over and helped the young maiden up: "Your name is Yan Zhi?"

"Yes, I was raised by the princess since I was very little, and given the name Yan Zhi. I was kept on the outside.....and studied all kinds of ways to kill, as well as martial skills." Yan Zhi looked down, and softly said: "Then a couple days ago, the princess finally brought me into the Prince Mansion, and disguised me as a common maid. In reality, it was to assassinate out noble son."

"So it is like that." Chu Mo nodded: "Since you have made a choice, then, we should no longer call you the name [Yan Zhi](#). It sounds like a servant girl's name, you don't even have an actual surname. Would you be offended.....taking on the surname Chu?"

[TL: Yan Zhi's name translates into 'rouge', like makeup. The character for 'Yan' in her original name isn't actually a traditional Chinese surname.]

Yan Zhi was first a little shocked, soon after, her eyes turned red. She knelt down once again while looking at Chu Mo.

Chu Mo cut her off: “Remember, you aren’t some servant from today on. You must not frequently kneel for people. Do you hear?”

Tears formed in the corners of Yan Zhi’s eyes, and instantly fell. She appeared vividly touched, like the moment of flowers blooming, just amazingly beautiful.

“I am a girl. My family never thought to give me a surname. In their opinion, I would join another man’s family sooner or later. Now my family is no longer alive. Not only has noble son taken me in, he has also granted me a name. I’m not offended, how could I be offended? Thank you noble son! Thank you!”

Chu Mo never imagined his thoughtless action, it would actually make the glamorous maiden have such a large response.

After thinking a moment, he said: “From now on, you will be named Chu Yan.”

“Yes!” The maiden’s eyes burst out with bright light. She mumbled out: “Chu Yan.....it truly sounds good. I finally have my own name and surname!

At the same time, she was extremely clear on the worth of the Chu name!

Chu Mo wouldn’t make her be submissive like a slave. He wouldn’t make her frequently kneel to others.....but there is seniority in this world, and clear lines of respect. Subordinates are

subordinates! When master asks you to kneel, do you dare not kneel?

Chu Mo clearly didn't treat her as a servant, then he said there is something for her to do, and now he gives her the name Chu.....to the a certain extent, he is treating her as a little sister!

At the very least, the whole Fan household, and the nobility in Yellow Flame City, they wouldn't regard Chu Yan as a maidservant upon seeing her.

As far as being a little older than Chu Mo, this was completely irrelevant.

What Chu Mo gave her.....is not only just a new life.

This is the most promising day in Chu Yan's teenage life.

This new year's night is her day of fortune.

“Good, I will make someone prepare a room for you. You can stay in this house tonight. As far as the other things, they will be said in time.” Chu Mo spoke, then grabbed out a pill: “Go back and take this. The poison in your body will be cured. However, the experience might be a little painful. Be ready to use the toilet.....”

“Oh.....” Chu Yan suddenly looked shy. She couldn't help but give Chu Mo a blank glance.

Chu Mo called over a maidservant, and had her lead Chu Yan to a renovated room.

The maidservant looked at the girl who suddenly appeared. She just about stared, and she felt a little loss in her heart. She never thought such a high status girl would appear so suddenly in the household. She didn't know this new girl's relationship with the young master, but obviously.....she was much higher status than herself and the other maidservants.

But this thought disappeared in an instant, because she is already extremely fortunate to come here and encounter a master like this.

Chu Mo sat down and drank his tea after sending Chu Yan away. He couldn't help but smile. He softly said to himself: "My luck really isn't bad. If the princess knew that her trump card, the one she painstakingly raised over the years, became my follower, would she cough up blood? All in all, the princess has been quiet recently. I hope you stay quiet."

At this very moment, the princess Yuan Zidai that he spoke of was extremely angry.

This powerful Prince Mansion woman would have originally gone to the royal new year's banquet, and casually chatted with a group of noble women.

She can only stay in the nunnery of Yellow Flame City nowadays. Although the table was full of delicious meat and vegetable dishes

of every kind, she had no appetite.

That originally beautiful face was warped with hatred.

A young handsome teenager was before her, only he had a somewhat girl-like manner.

He was Xia Jie, the one Chu Mo kicked into an eunuch.

“Mother, don’t be mad. The situation has already become like this. What can we do?” Xia Jie’s voice was a little thin, sounding extremely strange. It was a little bit like a palace eunuch.

“What do you mean ‘what can we do’? I want revenge! I want revenge! Not only will I kill the little animal Chu Mo, I also won’t let that emotionless betraying Xia Jing go!” Yuan Zidai’s vision became cold. She gritted her teeth and said: “Do they really believe I’m still a stupid girl from a small clan? Does Xia Jing believe he can recklessly decide the fate of others simply because he is a prince? Can he decide life and death?”

“Mother.....you want revenge on my father?” Xia Jie appeared extremely shocked. He almost didn’t dare believe his mother.

Yuan Zidai looked at Xia Jie, and sneered: “You idiot, don’t tell me you can’t see our plight?”

Xia Jie said: “What plight? I am the sole heir to the Prince Mansion, although I.....was harmed by that animal Chu Mo, and

no longer have that ability, I am still the sole heir!

“That quickly won’t be the case.” Yuan Zidai looked at her son, and coldly spoke: “Once that little animal Chu Mo cures the old bastard’s sickness, he can quickly have a pile of sons! Do you understand? Will he care about a useless cripple like you at that time?”

“I’m not crippled!” Xia Jia soared up into a standing position. He angrily looked at his own mother: “Even you speak to me this way!”

The shrill voice traveled far away.

But no one heard. There was no one in this nunnery apart from the servants Yuan Zidai brought. Yuan Zidai drove out all the nuns that originally practiced here. Otherwise, how could there be meat dishes on this holy ground?

Yuan Zidai icily looked at her son: “Sit down!”

Xia Jie trembled. He sat down while appearing wronged, and began to cry.

This made Yuan Zidai even more fidgety. She looked at her son and indignantly said: “Cry cry cry, just like a girl! I see you’re upset. You’re only getting in the way here, get out get out get out! Scurry back to the prince mansion!”

Xia Jie stood up, flicked his sleeve, twisted his waist, and headed out.

Yuan Zidai flipped over the table full of delicious food, and hysterically roared: “Chu Mo! I will tear your corpse into ten thousand pieces!”

Yuan Zidai was like a lunatic. She smashed everything smashable inside the room, then panted from exhaustion. She gnashed her teeth and said: “Come out! I promise you!”

A handsome old man in his fifties suddenly appeared in the room. A wicked light was hidden in his eyes. He stared at Yuan Zidai’s well developed figure, then laughingly said: “Is princess really convinced?”

Yuan Zidai looked at the old man. Dense loathing flashed across the depths of her eyes, but she gritted her teeth and nodded: “I promise you.....”

The old man pressed near at this time.

Yuan Zidai retreated a step, sharply yelling: “Stay still!”

“Still pretending to be pure? Didn’t you already promise me?” The old man’s obscene expression revealed a trace of a sneer: “Do you still believe yourself a spoiled princess?”

Yuan Zidai coldly said: “I promise you, but don’t even think of

touching me before bringing Chu Mo's head!"

The old man somewhat impatiently said: "Just a little brat, you really think he is the devil?"

The old man once again pressed closer as he spoke. Yuan Zidai immediately raised a blade, and held it to her own throat: "Come any closer, and I'll die!"

"So be it.....I will go grab his head and bring it back! If you still dare refuse me, then don't blame me for using force!" The old man sneered: "Don't use suicide to threaten me. I don't want your death. You can't die!"

Yuan Zidai said: "I will be with you willingly, so long as you bring the little animal's head back!"

The old man's vision looked up and down Yuan Zidai's well developed places. He smiled, and then his figure suddenly disappeared from the room.

All of Yuan Zidai's energy had been sapped away. She stared blankly as she slumped into a chair.

Chapter 104: Bone Refinement

Chu Mo silently cultivated Heaven's Will My Will inside the room. His past accumulations already reached critical point.....he was prepared to break into the fourth realm.

From the body refinement period.....and now assaulting towards the bone refinement period!

The degree of purity for the Yuan Qi in Chu Mo's body far exceeded that of other cultivators in this world.

The strength of a cultivator not only depends on the realm, scripture, and martial skills, but it also depends on the Yuan Qi's degree of purity.

The more pure the Yuan Qi, the greater power a move has.

Martial skills can be acquired through daily training, and become more and more mature. However, the degree of Yuan Qi purity hinges upon the cultivating scripture. No one has the ability to change this aspect.

Scripture is far more valuable than martial skill and techniques because it can build a foundation.

A good cultivation method is simply priceless. The top level sects on the four continents are all powerful because they all have their own powerful cultivation methods.

And Chu Mo's Heaven's Will My Will.....is the most powerful one!

A large amount of Yuan Qi gathered towards Chu Mo's room from all directions along with his practice of the cultivation method.

It all swarmed in through the meridians on Chu Mo's body.

But Chu Mo didn't directly send the Yuan Qi into his Dantian this time.

Because the Yuan Qi in his Dantian was already enough to break into the fourth realm.

Chu Mo continuously guided this Yuan Qi towards the bones in his body, twisting it around the bones.

Tempering bone!

This is a difficult.....and painful process!

Chu Mo must maintain a high degree of consciousness, and not suffer any influence. Even though he has the ability to multitask, Chu Mo had to place much into tempering bones!

The last bit of his focus was used to maintain cultivation of

Heaven's Will My Will.

As far as the pain.....each strand of Yuan Qi is finer than the hair on one's head, and it possesses terrifying power. It appears intangible, but it is even sharper than knives!

Using this Yuan Qi and intertwining it onto the bones is the same as using knives to continuously cut.

The slightest strands and the smallest threads continuously wrapping around cutting!

Normal people feel pain when the skin on the finger is cut, don't even mention cutting a bone.

So much pain that you want to die, that description isn't enough to describe this sensation.

Bone refinement.....has never been a gentle or happy affair.

This is why Xu Fufu would rather die than constantly cultivate. He preferred to live a carefree life as a noble in the world.

Of course, there is one way to avoid this pain——pills!

Just like Chen Xingxue, she basically had no pain when breaking into the Yuan closure third realm. If she had enough high grade pills, then should could doing this into the bone refinement period,

and even promote into the peak of the bone refinement period——the golden stone realm!

The strongest pills in this world stop at that point.

The kind of pill that can make a person's realm reach the golden stone state is already considered a defiance of the natural order.

But this kind of realm is unstable. Because of this, cultivators normally don't use this method to promote their realms.

Only people like Chen Xingxue use these pills. Those people who want to prolong their life and live healthy.

This is the knowledge that the Demon Lord had told to Chu Mo.

The Demon Lord told Chu Mo that he must rely on his own effort if he truly wants to increase power.

“If a person could continuously eat pills and increase to the strongest realm, then the strongest person in the world would be a pill master.”

The Demon Lord's words were deeply stamped into Chu Mo's mind. He knew that his master was giving a warning. Don't neglect authentic cultivation just because you have the ability to refine pills.

“Don’t worry. I will work hard.....and move forward step by step!”

The Yuan Qi that far exceeded the pureness of other people’s turned into the sharpest blade in the world at this moment. The wrapping of Yuan Qi around his bones became extremely tight!

Ahhhh!

Chu Mo couldn’t help but suck in a cold breath. This sensation was even more painful than the Yuan beast blood bath.

However, Chu Mo was without any hesitation. He controlled the Yuan Qi, and continuously wrapped it around each bone in his body.

The Yuan Qi is like spider thread, and Chu Mo’s consciousness was like a spider controlling its thread, constantly spreading a net on his bones.....continuously tempering.

Chu Mo could even feel his bones constantly strengthening as the Yuan Qi wrapped around them.

Constantly becoming strong!

And becoming even stronger!

This process is like a caterpillar breaking the cocoon. In the

process, there is a long period of pain, torment, and struggle until the very end. The caterpillar breaks out, and in that moment.....it becomes a butterfly, one of the most beautiful creatures in the world!

At last there is only the skull remaining!

This is the hardest step. The vast majority of cultivators in this world give up on tempering the skull when they enter the bone refinement period.

They don't have the courage!

One mistake, and you are beyond recovery!

The thing Chu Mo didn't know is, practically no one tempers the bones all at once during the bone refinement process. This isn't just in the four continents, but even in the Spirit World and Immortal World.....practically none of the cultivators do this when going from the body to bone refinement stage.

And no one does it at such a dense concentration. The bones are wrapped without a single opening!

Almost everyone who passes from the body to bone refinement stage uses Yuan Qi to wrap around the legs, sternum, and arms.

Once the crucial bones are tempered, this is considered passing from the body to bone refinement stage.

The bones wrapped up in Yuan Qi will have their strength increased by several times. Normal blades will not be able to cause injury, and the bones basically become impenetrable.

This is already enough according to the cultivators!

When the peerless talents of the large sects merely wrap the bones with a few more Yuan Qi strands, they can be considered much stronger than others!

But in the eyes of the Demon Lord, these talents are merely fooling themselves!

Why are there fewer and fewer cultivators on the four continents that cultivate into the higher realms, and break into the void entering the Spirit World?

The fundamental reason is right here!

Their foundations aren't strong at all! In the opinion of the Demon Lord, these people don't even have a foundation to speak about.

He definitely couldn't permit his disciple to make this kind of error. Because of this, the Demon Lord told Chu Mo how to enter the bone refinement period in the first instant that Chu Mo's realm reached the peak body refinement period.

Chu Mo never had never been graced with this kind of knowledge. Not even his grandfather Fan Wudi spoke with him about how to break into the bone refinement period. Because of this, Chu Mo believed this is the way passing from the body refinement period into the bone refinement period should be!

Even if at the final step not a single person dared touch the skull on the four continents, the Spirit World, and the Immortal World.....Chu Mo still didn't stop!

Chapter 105: Breakthrough

His forehead was already oozing with sweat, but the sweat didn't drip to the floor because it turned to steam from the heat.

That's because at this time, Chu Mo already started wrapping the Yuan Qi towards his skull

Not just the cultivators on the four continents, but even the top level Immortal World cultivators would be terrified seeing this, and believe the little guy is crazy.

To do this solo without any protection skills, isn't it the same as seeking death?

But Chu Mo worked extremely hard in this somewhat shabby General's household.....because there wasn't enough time for repairs.

A two hour period flew by. The night sky had already entered its darkest moment.

The outside was pitch-black like ink. If one looked at their hands, then they couldn't see the fingers.

Just like how extreme sorrow turns to joy, the darkness wasn't far away from turning to light. There is only a moment before the gray dawn comes in the east. The first day of the new year is quickly arriving.

Chu Mo completely stopped the motion of Heaven's Will My Will at this moment. He could no longer continue multitasking at this time.

Chu Mo was completely out of mental energy to do another task. He could only use all his focus to temper the bones.

Chu Mo started to maneuver the pure and vastly powerful Yuan energy from his Dantian, and began to temper and wrap it around the skull.

Chu Mo's handsome face became twisted and hideous because of the pain. Sweat would come out and immediately dry, repeating over and over again. A layer of white crystal appeared on Chu Mo's face after a period of effort.

This crystal.....is the salt left over after a large amount of sweat evaporated away.

Chu Mo already reached the pivotal moment at this time. Only the crown of the head remained.

Chu Mo would truly step into the fourth rank iron bone realm of the bone refinement period. He just had to refine this last piece of bone using Yuan Qi.

Under these ignorant circumstances, he would create a true miracle. Chu Mo would forge an unprecedented total body bone

refinement.

Even the Demon Lord.....he would feel shock and terror. Perhaps he would feel regret at his own carelessness. Why didn't he tell Chu Mo about the skull.....not even the peak talents of the Immortal World would carelessly refine it.

Because that place.....is too sensitive.

One small mistake, and it is beyond redemption.

There are too many methods in the Immortal World to strengthen the body at the later stages. Most cultivators even wait until the later period to turn into a [gilded immortal](#).

[TL: I think 'gilded immortal' is just a phrase to indicate a person with an incredibly tough defense/body. I don't think it is referring to an actual cultivation level.]

Because of this, really no one is as insane as Chu Mo.

The Demon Lord made the mistake of having too much experience. He never thought Chu Mo could would even try the skull.

But now.....no one could stop Chu Mo. There wouldn't be enough time even if the Demon Lord returned right now.

This isn't a notched arrow, but an arrow that has already been let

loose.

Chu Mo fully concentrated. His head was so painful that it felt like exploding. Those minute strands contained the sensation of countless blades cutting the skull. Ordinary people would be horrified thinking about it, let alone try.

Chu Mo gritted his teeth. The veins on his forehead burst out, and he controlled the Yuan Qi to wind up the crown, cut by cut.

Practically all of the families in Yellow Flame City had sunken into a deep sleep. They tired long ago after the celebration at midnight on new year's eve.

The entire city seemed to be sleeping, and entirely peaceful.

It was so quiet that even the slightest wind could be heard.

A black colored figure rapidly advanced towards the Fan household. The figure moved hundreds of feet in an instant. Moving over the high and low buildings, the shadowy figure stepped on them, and propelled himself forwards.

Chu Mo was on the last step inside the room.....another three strands of Yuan Qi go on his skull, and he would be completely finished.

But this last step was also the most difficult, because Chu Mo already approached his max limit.

If his Yuan Qi wasn't incredibly pure; If his Dantian wasn't overflowing with accumulated Yuan Qi that was far beyond a normal cultivator; If he didn't use Heaven's Will My Will to slow down the energy consumption.....then a full body tempering would have been fundamentally impossible for anyone to accomplish.

The ignorant are fearless.

These four words are the most appropriate for Chu Mo right now.

It's precisely because he knows so little. He knows none of the so-called rules and regulations, the so-called customs, and the so-called possible and impossible, so everything is outside the box. He completely doesn't know.

He only remembered what his master told him.

“The transformation from the body to bone refinement period seems the most basic. In fact, several very important Immortal World talents don't even care, because they can make up for it later on. But if they make up for it later, then how can they reach beyond the innate realm?”

“A hundred thousand foot tall building starts from the foundation. The building will collapse sooner or later if the foundation is unsteady.”

“You cannot be stronger than others without working hard in this world.”

“Even the children of great men don’t wish to be laughed at. They don’t want to be wastes that rely on their parents, and desire to be just as strong or stronger. If they want the glory of their house to continue.....then they must continue to cultivate.”

“The road of cultivation is not for those who think of shortcuts. It seems clever at the time, but they are the greatest group of idiots. The day will come, and they will discover their clever shortcut has brought about harmful consequences.....it is somewhere in the back, smiling and waiting for them.”

“This is karma.”

Due to the Demon Lord’s repeated instruction, the unknowing and fearless Chu Mo amazingly stepped on a path that no one had ever tread upon.

Persistence, toughness, accumulated struggle, courage, and luck.....Chu Mo has all of these indispensable factors.

There’s no thought of failure.

Because of this, at the last moment when practically all of the Yuan energy was emptied from the Dantian.

Ding.

Chu Mo suddenly heard a clear crisp sound in his head.

Then, Chu Mo extremely shakily discovered, his body..... underwent some kind of incomprehensible enormous change.

All the bones on his body suddenly emitted dazzling rays of light.

These rays of light almost penetrated through his body, nearly directly erupting out.

Then all of the pain Chu Mo felt disappeared without a trace in an instant.

It vanished like smoke in thin air.

Then an extremely strong feeling came forth from the inside.

Although Chu Mo didn't test it out, he could feel the bones in his body reached a near unbreakable level. Chu Mo even felt that his body is now a supreme natural force in battle.

His entire body, each and every bone.....is now a godly weapon.

There wasn't the slightest bit of Yuan energy left in his Dantian, but Chu Mo felt unprecedentedly powerful.

“This is the bone refinement period? It’s unexpectedly so strong. Isn’t it a little different from the past bone refinement period warriors I faced?”

He slowly opened his eyes. The world before him became extremely fresh. The fine details that he never noticed before became incredibly clear.

He could even clearly see the floating dust in the room.

His ability to listen also reached a new level. He could hear countless details from the gentle wind outside that he never heard before.

Including a far approaching.....robe-flapping sound.

Chu Mo’s eyes flashed with a dazzling light.

He calmly sat there and waited.

At this moment, the door was pushed open.

Chapter 106: Defeating Iron Blood Realm

An old man of average stature with an obscene appearance emerged before Chu Mo.

“Yo ah? Interesting.....did I unexpectedly happen upon a little genius’s breakthrough? The iron bone period huh, so cruel cruel cruel cruel, how terrifying ah.” The man’s voice sounded like the unpleasant laughter of an old crow.

He sized up Chu Mo with great interest, and cackled: “There isn’t a trace of Yuan power left on your body? Do you want an hour to recover your Yuan power?”

Chu Mo simply glanced at the old man, and seriously spoke: “It’s the new year. You are so ugly, are you like an ugly ghost that comes out to scare people?”

“Little animal.....you dare mouth off on death’s door?” The old man took a large step towards Chu Mo. In his eyes, this teenager was no different than a lamb for slaughter.

Because of this, the old man raise a hand and slapped towards Chu Mo’s face.

You dare call someone your grandfather’s age ugly? Let me beat a lesson into you.

Pa!

The old man's wrist was tightly caught.

His eyes grew wide, revealing a look of disbelief and shock

The old man didn't speak, and only used power.....a large amount of Yuan Qi immediately erupted out, intending to shatter the hand that held his wrist into pieces.

"I will let you know what the power that can kill a thousand men means." The old man roared.

"Fifth rank that's it." Chu Mo simply said, and exerted his strength onto the wrist.

Crack!

The old man's wrist snapped right away.

"Ah!" The old man let out an extremely miserable cry.

He didn't have an ability like the demon lord to seal off noise in the room. Because of this, the miserable yell traveled far away in the peaceful night.

Everyone in the General's household.....and even the neighbors jumped in fright.

The fastest to react was naturally Chu Yan. The maiden was only wearing her pajamas with her cloak draped on the outside. She appeared weakly pale as she directly rushed into Chu Mo's room. What she saw made her stunned.

Chu Mo's face was covered in a white layer of crystals, appearing somewhat strange. However, he showed a taunting smile, and still held on to the old man's completely fractured wrist. He said: "Your screaming is uglier than your looks. It sounds terrible."

He looked over to the dumbstruck Chu Yan: "You wish to say something?"

"Ah.....I, I know him." Chu Yan astonishingly said.

The old man struck towards Chu Mo with an ugly expression. Chu Yan screamed out: "Careful noble son!"

Pa!

Chu Mo firmly stopped the old man's other blow, once again grabbing onto his wrist.

Only Chu Mo's arm was severely shaken this time.

After all, the old man exhausted all his strength to strike Chu Mo dead in this blow.

The fifth rank is a cultivator that can cut down a thousand men. A full power blow is naturally no small thing.

Chu Mo's arm merely shook, but the organs inside churned, causing a trace of blood to flow into his mouth.

Chu Yan enraged. A dagger appeared in her hand, and she directly charged towards the old man's heart from behind.

"Don't kill him." Chu Mo shortly said, and exerted a little force at the same time.

Snap!

The old man's other wrist also fractured.

"Ah!" The old man miserably screamed once again.

A burst of footsteps came from the courtyard. Everyone in the Fan household was alerted.

"Go, tell them to return to sleep. I'm fine." Chu Mo glanced at Chu Yan while slightly smiling.

Chu Yan was completely dumbstruck. Her vision was full of disbelief. She subconsciously nodded, turned, and left the room.

But a guard's voice quickly came from the Fan household courtyard: "Who are you? We want to see young master!"

Chu Mo coughed, and then yelled: "She is my adopted little sister Chu Yan. You all go back to sleep. I'm fine in here."

"There's really no problem?" The old Fan household guard couldn't help but ask.

Chu Mo laughed: "It's really nothing. I captured an assassin. I already have it under control. Go back to sleep." Chu Mo said. He then grinned at the old man: "Ugly man, weren't you saying something?"

"Little animal!" The old man painfully sweated. His eyes appeared extremely bitter. He indignantly looked at Chu Mo, and gave him a scolding: "Kill me if you have the guts!"

The Fan household members knew young master wasn't in trouble after hearing these words. But how could they go back to sleep now?

The crowd of people all stayed in the courtyard as a result. Concerned about the situation in the room, Chu Yan once again entered inside.

She looked at Chu Mo and said: "I've seen him before. He..... taught me some martial skills. He's related to the princess."

“Little slut.....you actually betray the princess. You won’t die well.” The old man yelled. His two wrists were completely fractured, and held by Chu Mo. The old man thought to strike a knee at Chu Mo.

Chu Mo added pressure with his hands, and the old man immediately cried in miserable pain. The screams passed far away through the walls of the house.

“That woman.....she’s still restless ah.” Chu Mo couldn’t help but sigh.

He coldly looked at the old man. Chu Mo suddenly let loose a fist, and ruthlessly struck towards the old man’s small Dantian region.

Boom!

The first fist of the nameless boxing skill!

Powerful beyond compare!

Chu Mo’s fist is fast and ruthless. The old man had no time to avoid, and was struck by Chu Mo.

Ouh!

The old man sprayed out a mouthful of blood, withering

instantly.

Chu Mo's fist crushed his Dantian!

The old man didn't scream this time because he already lost consciousness.

Chu Yan's shocked appearance didn't wane at all. She looked at Chu Mo and spoke with a quiver in her voice: "Noble son, you..... how can you so easily defeat a fifth rank iron blood cultivator? It's too unimaginable!"

"Iron blood realm?" Chu Mo looked at the old man collapsed on the floor, and laughed: "[His blood.....is no different.](#)"

[TL: I don't know if Chu Mo is lying here, but it is what the author wrote. The person is indeed a 5th rank iron blood cultivator.]

He stood up and walked to Chu Yan's side: "It's nothing. Don't worry about anything, but I suggest you go back and change clothes."

"Ah!" Chu Yan exclaimed. Her face rapidly turned red, then she grabbed her cloak and ran out.

Chu Mo laughed and followed outside. He saw the crowd of people in the courtyard. Everyone in the Fan household gathered there, including the maidservants he had recently taken in. They all looked at him with deep concern.

Chu Mo spoke with a warm heart: “It’s the new year. I have made you all worried. Have two men come and tie this old thing up. Send him to the Prince Mansion tomorrow. Tell the great man of the Prince Mansion that I sent him a new year’s gift!”

“.....” The crowd at the Fan household didn’t know what in the world just happened, appearing like they didn’t hear anything. However, they knew the young master had eased tensions with prince Xia Jing after smashing the Prince Mansion.

But tonight’s assassin.....how is it related?

They’d be scared half dead they knew the true identity of the old man. He is a thousand man killing cultivator even stronger than General Fan.

“Young Master.....was this assassin sent from the Prince Mansion?” A veteran soldier appeared enraged as he asked Chu Mo.

Another man gnashed his teeth: “Prince Xia Jing goes too far!”

Chu Mo waved his hand and said with a smile: “You’re all thinking too much. This person wasn’t sent by prince Xia Jing. Send him over tomorrow. The prince will know what to do. The sky is getting brighter. I’m dead tired.....everyone go back to sleep.”

Two veteran guards dragged the unconscious man from Chu Mo's room, and they bound him with ropes.

Two maidservants silently entered Chu Mo's room. They deftly tied up the place, and then silently withdrew.

Miao Yiniang selected no mere ordinary servant girls for Chu Mo. It could be seen from this act alone.

Their courage was also far beyond normal!

Ordinary girls would be too scared to act if they saw this kind of scene.

Chu Mo thought while praising their courage: A life with maidservants is truly not the same ah.....

His body finally felt unpleasant at this moment. He still suffered internal injuries from the old man's blow.

This pain was somewhat depressing. This strike wouldn't have injured him at all if there was abundant Yuan energy in his body.

"Looks like I need find a peaceful place that others cannot find when it's time for the next breakthrough."

Chu Mo calmed down the crowd, and then returned to the room. He started exercising his energy to heal the injuries.

Chapter 107: Paying Someone A Visit

Three days had passed since new year's night.

Miao Yiniang gave the Gluttonous Ogre account books, official seal, the deed, and a pile of other things to Liu Mei'er on this third day, officially handing them over.

Liu Mei'er instantly became the Gluttonous Ogre's boss!

That pitiful little girl who had no control of her fate has been transformed. She is now a person of status in Yellow Flame City. Her fate had a complete change because of Chu Mo and Xu Fufu.

At the same time, someone else's fate had also completely changed because of Chu Mo. The woman with the most authority in the Prince Mansion.....princess Yuan Zidai.

Only Liu Mei'er's fate went from bad to good, and Yuan Zidai's fate.....sank into the abyss!

The Fan household guards delivered the tied up old man to the Prince Mansion early morning on new year's day.

These guards weren't aware of what happened after. They only gave Chu Mo a report. The guards said prince Xia Jing didn't appear, but he had someone make a statement: "Tell Chu Mo sorry, and thank young master Chu!"

The Fan household guards were puzzled at prince Xia Jing's words. However, Chu Mo only laughed when he heard.

News came in the afternoon that princess Yuan Zidai died of sudden illness.

Chu Yan locked herself in the room and cried all afternoon when she heard. She came out in the evening, and despite Chu Mo's prior objections, she knelt on the ground. She respectfully bowed to Chu Mo to express thanks.

The killing of her parents was absolutely irreconcilable, not to mention killing the whole family!

Chu Yan still remembered the deep affection Yuan Zidai once held for her, and she couldn't personally seek revenge. But how could Chu Yan's heart be without hatred?

Now Yuan Zidai has passed, and so has the hatred. The former gratitude and grudges easily floated away.

Chu Mo never heard the news on Xia Jie. However, he heard a little something from Miao Yiniang. He spoke to her on this third day, when he took Chu Yan to witness the official handover of the Gluttonous Ogre.

"Xia Jie has gone missing. He disappeared when his mother died, and no one knows where he is." Miao Yiniang worriedly looked at Chu Mo: "You need to be careful. He certainly hates you to the

core.”

Chu Mo helplessly shook his head. This is the way of the world. Maybe Xia Jie sends someone to kill him, and then he can take revenge.....the question is, on what grounds does Chu Mo have to kill Xia Jie now?

“Don’t worry, I won’t have problems.” Chu Mo smiled. He then introduced Miao Yiniang to Chu Yan. He didn’t conceal anything, not even her history.

Miao Yiniang looked back and forth between Chu Mo and Chu Yan. She lovingly said: “It looks like my young master has become more and more charming. Even maidens of the enemy are being swindled over to our side. You’re quickly catch up to Xu Fufu!”

Chu Yan’s face turned red, and she embarrassingly lowered her head.

Chu Mo could only helplessly look at Miao Yiniang: “You don’t like it. I’ll return.”

“Don’t! I like, I really like. I’ve been searching everywhere for such an outstanding younger sister.” Miao Yiniang pulled Chu Yan’s hand while she spoke. She smiled and said: “She is mine when she isn’t helping you. You can go!”

Chu Mo couldn’t help but return a haughty look. Then he explained to Chu Yan: “Treat Yiniang as a big sister. She definitely

won't bully you."

"Ah. You're both named Chu.....and mine's not the same. I should change my name tomorrow, and call myself Chu Yiniang." Miao Yiniang lamented from the side.

Chu Yan softly said: "I didn't have a surname originally. Noble son gave me one."

Miao Yiniang put all joking aside, and lovingly hugged Chu Yan: "Good little sister, your big sister is just joking. Take it easy, I will be your big sister from now on. I'll help take care of anyone that dares bully you!"

Chu Mo bid farewell to Miao Yiniang soon after. He left Chu Yan, and returned to the Fan household alone.

One-armed uncle already returned, and he brought back new information.

"The Windcloud auction house has set the date for the fifth..... which is the day after tomorrow. They will begin selling off the first batch of our goods." One-armed uncle excitedly said: "Young master, we will soon be rich!"

"Yes ah.....rich." Chu Mo slightly smiled. Wealth can make a person's life much better. It has always been this way.

Even a man like one-armed uncle, who doesn't think about

money, has become so excited from the news. The power of money is self-evident.

“As soon as we have the money, we will immediately restore our household! I’m afraid the General won’t dare believe this is the Fan household when he returns.” The middle-aged one-armed uncle smiled.

“Not too much, careful not to get scolded.” Chu Mo reminded with good intention.

“Don’t worry young master. I already have a number in mind not to exceed. Magnificent luxury is not the General’s style!” One-armed uncle said. He then said to Chu Mo: “Right, this auction house seems to be selling off several top grade drug ingredients.”

“Oh?” Chu Mo’s eyebrows jumped. He thought: ‘This news needs to be told to Xia Jing, given that he can buy those top grade ingredients now, but he will certainly feel the pain. Let Xia Jing spend the money nevertheless. The prince is rich enough to rival a nation. I ought to let him bleed a little.’

Chu Mo decided to take a walk to the Prince Mansion later in the afternoon as he thought.

However, Xia Jing took the initiative before Chu Mo even left.

There was no other way. The grand prince didn’t want to personally take initiative and pay a visit. However, whether a

person is nobility or a commoner in the street, there is no difference when facing an illness. Disease won't let a person go because of their status.

After he took the pill, the prince finally recovered the confidence that he lost so many years ago.

As far as the mighty prince that held heavenly authority, he was like a newborn. He felt great satisfaction again, but he didn't dare be excessively greedy.

He carefully followed Chu Mo's warning.

The matter with the princess made Xia Jing come to a realization. There are some things that must quickly be decided.

He didn't want Chu Mo to take the initiative and pay a visit. The reason is very simple. The new year's night assassination attempt scared the willies out of him. Chu Mo wasn't harmed, but Xia Jing was still very afraid.

Who could he cry to on the chance that Chu Mo gets hurt?

Yuan Zidai had private contact with a few sect members. Xia Jing already knew this. He considered this at the time, but he didn't tell Chu Mo. Because at that time, Chu Mo didn't truly show his ability to refine medicine yet!

Chu Mo successfully avoided assassination that night, but Xia

Jing was in a cold sweat.

For this reason, Xia Jing must guarantee Chu Mo's safety until he fully recovers.

Even when he fully recovers, he still wants to turn Chu Mo into a friend. After all.....who could guarantee there wouldn't be a use for Chu Mo in the future?

The old assassin was secretly executed by Xia Jing. However, Xia Jing was scared into another cold sweat before he put the man to death.

Because the assassin actually was a rank five cultivator that can kill a thousand men!

Chapter 108: The Most Ruthless Royal Family

This cultivator was actually crippled by someone. After asking mister Wei Chi, Xia Jing found out that a fifth rank cultivator could only be crippled by someone as strong as mister Wei Chi, a person at the sixth rank.

So the mysterious master supporting Chu Mo made prince Xia Jing a little terrified. He didn't want to make Chu Mo an enemy even more now.

Powerful people are all quite clever. They normally only see profit and loss. As far as holding grudges.....is it really that important?

Xia Jing never thought the fifth rank cultivator was defeated by Chu Mo's hand, and the old man was too ashamed to say such a thing. He never told the truth even until death.

These reasons made Xia Jing have even more fear towards Chu Mo.

That is the reason for paying a visit.

Chu Mo welcomed Xia Jing into the living room. He smiled and said: "Why has the grand prince personally come?"

Xia Jing's visit to the Fan household was extremely low-key. He only brought two attendants so no one on the outside would know, but he also brought a lavish gift.

A 50,000 silver [liang](#) bank note!

[TL: A liang is an ancient Chinese measurement for weight. It is said to be 50 grams, but I've also seen other weight amounts listed online. You can see various ones by [google searching 两银](#)]

Xia Jing warmly smiled after placing the silver bank note on the table: "Young master Chu, this is my little token, please don't be offended."

Chu Mo glanced at the number on the bank note. His heart slightly shook, and he couldn't help but think: 'That silver bank note can buy ten Fan households. That's the largest amount of money I've ever seen.'

But Chu Mo wasn't intimidated, because he will soon be rich.

Because of this, he simply smiled: "The great prince is too polite. I will accept this silver bank note."

Xia Jing was immediately happy. He then carefully said: "The Cloudwind auction is the day after tomorrow. A batch of top grade medicines are being sold. I plan on buying them all. Will young master Chu be free at that time? Would you like to come with?"

Chu Mo chuckled while looking at Xia Jing: "Is the prince

looking to pull me aboard?”

Xia Jing’s face turned red. He somewhat embarrassingly coughed twice: “Does young master Chu have to be so direct?”

Xia Jing softly sighed: “I never thought the crown prince would be so excessive. He even acted against you.”

“So, have we become natural allies?” Chu Mo asked.

Xia Jing smiled: “What else? Do you think that you have the ability to fight the crown prince?”

Xia Jing began resuming the manner of a Da Xia prince at this time.

Chu Mo slightly shook his head: “I know that I’m just a pawn; however, opposing me won’t be that easy for them.”

Xia Jing meaningfully looked at Chu Mo: “You can’t rely on master your whole life.”

Chu Mo glanced over at Xia Jing: “His royal highness sees right through me. But I must say, I still don’t fully trust your majesty even now.”

“It doesn’t matter if you trust me now. You will trust me one day.” Xia Jing said very confidently: “I have done many good and

bad things over the years. I don't dare say that I'm a good man, but I'm not a bad man either. My greatest mistake over the years is indulging Xia Jie too much. He developed an arrogant temper, and became insolent. Xia Jie also lacked brains, and his life was plotted against."

"Plotted against?" Chu Mo looked to Xia Jing.

Xia Jing spoke in a low voice: "You think Xia Jie's attempt against princess Xingxue.....was actually an accident? There are many coincidences in the world, but very few are at such a high degree. I carefully investigated the matter later on. Someone was definitely plotting against him. And it was someone with the ability and courage to plot against a prince and princess.....ha ha."

Xia Jing laughed twice, and didn't say anything else. He deeply looked at Chu Mo: "You accidentally interrupted at that time. Although you crippled my only son, but you also broke their plot. On some level you actually saved me, and you also saved that little animal's life. Otherwise, that little animal would have really done it....."

A chill flashed across Xia Jing's pupils.

Chu Mo knew. The little animal he referred to was Xia Jie.

Xia Jing sighed: "But this matter completely pulled you into the maelstrom. In addition, your grandfather General Fan also had a conflict with them in the past....."

Chu Mo simply said: “And now I’m giving you medicine too.”

Xia Jing nodded: “Right, they wish to see a prince with troubles, not an extremely normal prince.”

“So generally speaking, they’ve made me an enemy no matter what. Am I right?” Chu Mo sighed.

“Their enemy is actually the emperor also.” Xia Jing stunningly remarked.

Chu Mo abruptly raised his head. His brow furrowed, and he looked at Xia Jing: “What do you mean?”

“Exactly what you’re thinking.” Xia Jing simply said.

“It can’t be?”

“Why not?”

“He’s a crown prince. The throne will pass to him sooner or later.”

“Ha ha.....a crown prince over the age of forty. How much longer can he wait? The emperor isn’t young, but do you think the emperor seems old?” Xia Jing grimly spoke.

“The emperor.....he really isn’t old. He seems like a middle-aged man in the prime of life.” Chu Mo replied.

“The emperor has taken sever top grade pills. His cultivation level has already reached the fifth realm. Ha ha.....although he isn’t much of a fighter. However, living over a hundred shouldn’t be a problem.” Xia Jing laughed: “Do you think his majesty the crown prince has the patience to wait another forty years? Will he wait until eighty to inherit the throne?”

“.....” Chu Mo appeared speechless. The corners of his mouth twitched several times, actually unable to speak.

Xia Jing sighed at Chu Mo: “My brother.....he is actually well aware, so you don’t need to worry. The crown prince and the others, although they aren’t weak, well you could say they are quite strong, but.....they will certainly have unsightly deaths if they really wish to fight the emperor.”

Xia Jing coldly smiled as he spoke.

Chu Mo trembled inside. He once heard as a child: The most ruthless royal family. He didn’t understand then, but now it appears to be literal.

Xia Jing heartily looked at Chu Mo: “Little Chu, to tell the truth, I really hated you in the beginning. I have changed my mind. You don’t need to laugh. It isn’t merely because of your medical skills, but also because of your character. I finally understand why that old guy Xu Zhongliang likes you. If we could, I’d like to forget the

past and become friends.”

Chu Mo was silent a moment, then raised his head and calmly looked at Xia Jing: “I will also speak the truth. It is very hard for me to trust you. But, this doesn’t matter right? If the prince is telling the truth, then time will tell.” Chu Mo smiled and said: “Set up a room for the auction. I don’t want to appear with you in public.”

Xia Jing appeared happy. He nodded and said: “Don’t worry, I will make proper arrangements.”

Chu Mo nodded: “My master.....cough cough, that one. So long as prince prepares almost all the drug ingredients, the rest of the medicine can quickly be refined.”

Chu Mo appeared calm, as if he didn’t divulge anything.

A trace of color flashed across Xia Jing’s pupils. He thought: ‘So that’s how it is.’

Xia Jing bid farewell soon after.

Chu Mo returned to his room after Xia Jing left. He simply smiled: “Having master as a super-shield.....is really not bad.”

Chapter 109: Windcloud Auction House

The sky was a little overcast on the fifth day of the new year. There was a large wind, and it was cold. A few rays of light occasionally broke through the clouds, yet there was still no warmth.

Several shops on the street had already opened. Practically all of Yellow Flame City was still enveloped in the new year's mood.

There weren't too many pedestrians on the street, so Chu Mo was able to quickly ride a carriage through.

Miao Yiniang and Chu Yan both sat opposite of Chu Mo. They watched Chu Mo as he looked out the window. Miao Yiniang couldn't help but laugh and say: "Isn't it nice having a carriage with a window?"

Chu Mo turned around, laughed, and said: "Why do you say that, actually windowless carriages aren't bad. I can't see the outside, but at the same time.....the outside can't see me."

Miao Yiniang was a little startled, then she smiled: "That's just silly logic."

Chu Yan said from the side: "Noble son is taking us to the auction house. Is it so we can gain experience?"

Chu Me wryly smiled and said: "I've also never been to the

auction house. My family has always been very poor. Just the words 'auction house' alone are enough to scare me away. When would I have dared gone there before? So this is also my first time going. It's still the new year. I'm taking you two out for some fun."

Miao Yiniang warmly smiled: "My young master knows how to love people dearly."

Chu Yan's face slightly reddened. She then very curiously looked at Chu Mo: "Didn't noble son say he grew up in a General's household? How could you be poor?"

"Must an army General be wealthy?" Chu Mo asked in return.

Chu Yan thought a moment, then spoke: "In my thinking, Generals aren't wealthy, but they couldn't be called poor. But after seeing the General's household, I can believe noble son's words. But what is the reason for this?"

Miao Yiniang said from the side: "The grandfather of your family's noble son is too good a man. Although he is a General, and his salary isn't low, apart from saving enough money to eat every year, the remaining.....is practically all given to the surviving family members of those who died in battle."

"Ah, so that's how it is, sorry." Chu Yan's expression appeared a little shaken.

Anyone can do good. However, few put themselves into a

condition like old General Fan. This type of person automatically deserves respect, regardless if you know him or have ever met him.

Chu Mo looked out the carriage window to the outside. Occasionally he could see naughty children setting off fireworks, or running around with cold dripping noses.

This place was peaceful and cheerful. This is his home, the place he wants to defend.

This has nothing to do with the emperor or any man.

It's something that is a piece of Chu Mo, held fast in the depths of his heart. It comes from the teachings that the General gave to him since childhood.

The Windcloud auction house was the largest auction house in Yellow Flame City. It was a two story building over a hundred feet tall.

The walls were made of limestone, appearing vast and simple. The roof was quite steep, and the four corners of the roof gracefully pulled up into points. It was exquisite and elaborate, as well as unusually imposing.

A large stone sign was attached above the entrance, the words Windcloud Auction House were carved into the sign in large letters.

It was said the Windcloud Auction House had a history of over a thousand years. It was even older than the founding of Da Xia. A sect has always been standing in the background behind it, never wavering.

The carriage stopped at the auction house entrance. A large amount of carriages were already gathered. There was heavy traffic, and it was extremely congested, but not noisy at all.

Several people were wearing large bamboo hats, covering up their appearances. Several others wore black capes that covered the head as well, keeping their faces hidden underneath the hoods. Some just simply wore a mask or veil.

In short, the majority of people here didn't want their true status known by others.

Chu Mo foolishly looked out the window at the sight. He said: "It seems we don't have any concealment....."

Miao Yiniang took out two veils from her robes. She gave Chu Yan one, then laughed at Chu Mo: "Young master, this is yours."

"....." Chu Mo was completely dumbstruck.

Miao Yiniang finally pulled out a mask with a smiling expression. She handed it to Chu Mo and said: "I knew you wouldn't think of this."

“Why is it like this?” Chu Mo was a little concerned.

He is clever, even like an evil person in some aspects. But he is only a fourteen year old in the end. He naturally hasn't experienced everything.

Miao Yiniang said: “Let's say we buy a treasure here, and another person wants it. There could be much trouble if they know our identity. Hide your identity, then who will know who you are after the auction?”

Chu Mo suddenly understood: “So that's how it is.”

While speaking, He took the mask that Miao Yiniang prepared for him. He then mumbled: “I had Xia Jing prepare a room for us. Then, won't Xia Jing know my identity even if I wear the mask..... and it still won't be secret?”

Miao Yiniang nodded, and said: ‘In any case, we can still sit in the main hall.’

Chu Mo thought it over: “That's good. We don't plan on buying anything anyways. We can sit in the main hall.”

As Chu Mo spoke, he started to change his physique according to the techniques that the demon lord taught him.

Before entering the bone refinement period, it would be very difficult to change his body shape using this kind of method, but

now, changing body characteristics was no problem for Chu Mo.

Chu Mo's body started to make clicking noises. Miao Yiniang and Chu Yan both looked at him suspiciously.

The two girls discovered Chu Mo's stature changed after leaving the carriage.....he was actually a half-head taller, and his frame was completely different than his normal thin figure. He seemed like an entirely different person. The current Chu Mo looked even more like an adult.

While wearing a small mask, no matter how you look, it gives off a type of evil feeling.

Miao Yiniang and Chu Yan both stared a little stupidly. The thoughts of the two girls were both a little shaken. But they kept it together, and didn't ask any questions.

Those who want to enter the auction house must have an invitation card, otherwise, even the prince would have to wait outside. In order to protect a guest's identity, the auction house invitation cards are all standardized.

Chu Mo immediately went inside with the two girls after showing his invitation. A spacious and empty feeling struck them in the face as soon as they entered.

There were chairs all the way down from where they were standing. Each chair had a numbered auction paddle. If they

wanted to bid on something, then they must raise the paddle.

An enormous chandelier hung halfway from the ceiling, and it lit up the entire auction house. The whole second floor was composed of private rooms. There were twenty one rooms total. The rooms were divided into the heaven, earth, and mortal grades, with seven rooms to each grade. These rooms were the territory of the big shots.

Xia Jing originally prepared the seventh heaven grade room for Chu Mo, but because he didn't want to reveal himself, he didn't go up.

Chu Mo lead the two girls, and casually sat down at one of the highest places in the back corner.

He then watched the large of mass of people start filling the room.

The hall could fit over a thousand people, and the number of people inside quickly exceeded five hundred.

And it still wasn't time to close the doors.

The whole hall was a little noisy, but it wasn't a mess. People grouped together in twos and threes, and murmured among each other. Several people wore masks or the big bamboo hats, but they emitted an aura very different from normal people.

Chu Mo slightly squinted, and quietly asked Miao Yiniang: “Are there normally several sect members in this auction house?”

Chapter 110: Bronze Cauldron

Miao Yiniang slightly shook her head. Her eyes carried much uncertainty, and she whispered: “No, I don’t often go to the auction house, but I receive an invitation practically every time because I run the Gluttonous Ogre. I’ve been a few times, but this is the first time it’s been like this.”

Miao Yiniang seemed a little confused while looking at Chu Mo: “How can you tell those people come from a sect?”

“Chu Mo laughed, then whispered: “People from the sects can cover their whole bodies, but an air of arrogance still penetrates through.”

Miao Yiniang gave Chu Mo a haughty look: “Aren’t you tarring everyone with the same brush?”

Chu Mo chuckled.

Miao Yiniang whispered: “However, what you said is indeed logical.”

Chu Yan somewhat curiously sized up everyone in the room, silently observing their movements and actions. At the same time, she also observed all the entrances to auction house, and started taking note of everything. These things were already instinct to her.

Chu Yan has an amazing intelligence gathering ability that is on par with her assassination skill, excusing the day she massively failed assassinating Chu Mo. Her observation skills are quite keen, and she has very strong insights.

This is also the main reason for her failed assassination that day.

She could tell right away that Chu Mo was someone she couldn't assassinate. If she continued, she would only be throwing away her life. This was plain fact, and she was right.

The doors finally closed after a time. The auction hall was already seventy percent full at this moment.

The greater half of people hid their true identities, but the remaining few calmly showed their true selves. Either they weren't afraid, because they weren't afraid of anyone, or they weren't going to buy anything, and they purely came to see the activity.

A fat middle-aged man walked onto the lowest stage at this time. If one didn't carefully watch, they would believe a meatball just rolled on the stage.

However, no one who knew the Windcloud Auction House dared look down upon this middle-aged fatty. Because he is the Wincloud Auction House's chief auctioneer. Very few people know his name, but practically everyone calls him Fat Brother.

“Strange, why has Fat Brother personally come today? Don’t tell me a big item has appeared?”

“Yes ah. This is indeed a little strange. Normally Fat Brother won’t appear if there isn’t a big item.”

“Fat Brother is the Windcloud Auction House’s second manager.....”

Those familiar with each other assembled together, and began to whisper to each other.

The people who came without any disguise were completely off guard. Their faces all revealed a color of regret, because Fat Brother’s appearance means that this auction very likely has an unimaginable treasure.

“Ha ha, new and old friends, happy new year everyone! Long time no see, I have missed all of you.” Fat Brother’s voice resounded as he stood there. A group of smiles spread through the auction hall.

“I see those without disguises look a little depressed. Probably because I appeared, it makes you think this auction must have something good right?”

“Don’t tell me it isn’t true?” Someone shouted from the large hall.

Fat Brother laughed, and then nodded: ‘This time there really is something good, and actually not just a few. Those that came without disguises, please don’t worry about anything. These items are all very nice, but they aren’t worth killing over.’

Fat Brother smiled as he spoke: “Good, let’s get down to business and start today’s auction.”

The manner of the ball-like, fat middle-aged man completely changed as he said this. His whole aura changed from that of a money-bags into fully dignified person of authority.

Chu Mo was a little shocked. This felt extremely fresh, and he didn’t blink at all. However, Chu Mo also felt someone look his way at this point in time. This looked clearly carried a trace of murderous intent.

“Ah?” Chu Mo was a little shocked. He thought: ‘This disguise ability comes from master. There shouldn’t be anyone on the four continents that can see through it?’

However, Chu Mo soon discovered the murderous intent wasn’t directed at him, but rather towards Miao Yiniang at his side.

Chu Mo clearly felt Miao Yiniang become tense, seeming to be very nervous.

Chu Mo stealthily tapped Miao Yiniang’s hand.

He felt Miao Yiniang relax a little, but she was still a little tense.

On the stage, Fat Brother already pulled out the first item for auction at this time. It was a bronze cauldron that was over a thousand years old. The bronze cauldron was three feet tall, with three legs and two handles. The outside was rusted, and seemed to be carved with a few birds and beasts.

Miao Yiniang saw the bronze cauldron, and she immediately became urgent. She suddenly turned her hand over and grabbed onto Chu Mo's hand.

Her hand.....was slightly cold, and trembled a little.

Chu Mo squinted, but he couldn't make out any facial expression. At the same time, the long inactive jade suddenly scalded him.

"Can everyone see clearly? This bronze cauldron has quite a history. It's definitely not a product of the Azure Dragon Continent, and it reportedly comes from the Vermilion Bird continent. The cauldron apparently comes from a once glorious large sect." Fat Brother gave the opening introduction.

Chu Mo understood something from Miao Yiniang's ice-cold trembling hand. He returned the grip on Miao Yiniang's hand, then looked at Fat Brother on the stage.

"According to my knowledge, this bronze cauldron should be used as a sacrificial cauldron to the gods or ancestors. Of course, it

could be a cauldron for refining medicine. The methods inside of sects are beyond what the secular world people like us can imagine.” Fat Brother said. He slightly smiled: “No matter its former glorious past, now.....it is merely an artifact. Place it in your house, let it serve as decoration. It should be quite nice. The starting price is two hundred liang.....of gold.”

Chu Mo saw several people ready to act and raise a paddle when Fat Brother said the words two hundred liang. Then the people immediately became enraged when he said it was gold liang, and set down the paddles they thought to raise.

One gold liang is equal to ten silver liang. Even if this bronze cauldron was from a large sect in the Vermillion Bird continent, there was no way it is worth two thousand silver liang. This starting price was a little off the charts.

Chu Mo didn’t even act in the first instant, because of that look just now. This bronze cauldron could very likely come from the Misty Palace sect.....and seems to be related.

Chu Mo isn’t someone expert in conspiracy theories, but this matter seems to be quite strange.

Fat Brother looked at the crowd below, but he wasn’t worried. He said with a laugh: “This price is a little expensive, but it is something from a large sect after all. Who knows what clever uses it could have? Perhaps the water stored inside it can cure all illness. Ha ha, just a joke. Don’t take that as the the truth. It could very well be poison after drinking, so don’t sue me.”

Fat Brother's humorous words re-activated the mood on the stage. He spoke again: "Actually, since it is an artifact, I think it is worth this price. Of course, it's only worth it if you like it."

A noise finally came from the hall at this time. Someone finally raised a paddle.

"Two hundred and ten gold. I want it. Say yes Fat Brother. I like it so the price is worth it. I love this kind of stuff. I'll take it home and place it by the door to catch rainwater."

Chapter 111: Upstart

The person speaking didn't even cover his face. He was a hefty middle-aged man in his forties. His face was dark with heavy features, but not ugly.

Two bewitchingly beautiful women in fox fur coats sat beside him, and each of the man's ten fingers bore a ring, like he wanted to blind people.

"It's Wang Dafa! Damn, this upstart has practically all the Yellow Flame City timber business in his hands."

"This guys is a unique one. Clearly he can enter the second floor, but he actually likes sitting on the first floor. Moreover, he hasn't ever concealed his identity. Do you see the two women at his side? Don't they look like brothel girls? I'm telling you all, those two girls are actually true experts! They are disciples from a sect! They are both Wang Dafa's mistresses! Damn....."

The people inside the hall whispered: "I hate hillbillies with filthy money the most. They use valuable historical artifacts.....to catch rain water."

"Wang Dafa has always been an idiot who burns musical instruments to cook cranes. He battled with another moneybags here last year, and spent ten thousand silver liang on a zither. Then he smashed the instrument on the spot while saying 'Who's the daddy with the money now? This toy still makes noises when I break it? How about daddy gives you a performance?'.....I want to

throttle him to death!”

The person speaking wasn't far away from Chu Mo, so he could hear everything clearly.

Miao Yiniang's ice-cold hand shivered somewhat violently. She obviously heard the man's comments, and became extremely upset.

“Calm down.” Chu Mo's mouth didn't even move, but he sent a message straight into Miao Yiniang's ear.

This was Chu Mo's first time using this kind of skill. It was one of the many skills from the scripture that the Demon Lord passed down.

Miao Yiniang appeared slightly shocked. She glanced at the expressionless Chu Mo, and then calmed down. Her ice-cold shivering hand slowly relaxed.

Fat Brother said from the stage: “Someone is willing to bid two hundred and ten gold liang. Is there a higher bid?”

This bronze cauldron really didn't look valuable at all. Even if it once refined medicine, how many people in the secular world could use it?

Ordinary firewood could heat it several days and nights, but it wouldn't have any change!

So there wasn't another person present that was willing to bid.

Chu Mo once again felt a glance fall onto Miao Yiniang. Chu Mo didn't try and catch the glance. He casually grabbed the paddle from his chair, and raised it up, simply saying: "Two hundred and twenty gold liang. I really like this thing. Could mister Wang please part with it?"

Sitting in the front, Wang Dafa was slightly shocked. He couldn't help but turn around and look. He knew the opinion people had of him. Someone unsophisticated, new money, and a country bumpkin.....he had heard everything.

He is a big businessman, even if he doesn't understand style and elegance. Going so far as to smash a ten thousand silver liang zither, he must be someone with a competitive nature in his bones.

Didn't all of you say I'm a hillbilly? Then I'll give you a hillbilly!

This was Wang Dafa's temperament. You all don't respect me, no problem, I don't need your respect!

But, did he really not cherish respect? However, respect was unobtainable, so what was he to do?

Because of this, this is the first time in Wang Dafa's whole life that he has been called mister!

Therefore, even if that youth was wearing a mask and couldn't clearly be seen, even though they never met before, Wang Dafa suddenly felt a warmth spread inside. He felt like someone valued him. Wang Dafa practically viewed this stranger as close friend in an instant.

This seems somewhat laughable, but reality is often stranger than fiction.

As a result, this Yellow Flame City timber tycoon made an astonishing action. He stood up and loudly laughed: "This is a first for a hillbilly like me. Someone has called me mister, and it feels great. Brother, I will now call you 'my boy'. Don't say anything, I'm giving you this cauldron!"

Wang Dafa said to Fat Brother on the stage: "Fat Brother, [two hundred and eighty-eight](#) gold liang. I want to give it to that brother! The number is good luck!"

[TL: The number 288 is very lucky in China. It means to prosper.]

Chu Mo stared foolishly. All the other people in the auction house were also shocked.

Several people regretfully beat their chests and stamped their feet. Had they known earlier, they would have called the hillbilly mister a long time ago, and obtained an artifact worth nearly three thousand silver liang!

Chu Mo stared blankly for a moment, then came back to his senses. He wryly smiled: "Big brother Wang.....is this okay?"

Wang Dafa waved a hand: “You even call me big brother. How could I not give you a new year’s gift? It’s already settled!”

Chu Mo was a little speechless. He thought a moment, then faced Wang Dafa, and bowed: “Big brother Wang is a straightforward man. I won’t be overly polite. I owe big brother a favor next time!”

“Ha ha ha, well said. Come over and have a drink sometime!” Wang Dafa generously laughed. Then he extremely happily sat down. Three thousand silver liang seems to be just a number to him.

This outcome was unforeseen by everyone. Not even Fat Brother on the stage expected the useless bronze cauldron to fetch such a price. It was a pleasant surprise.

Because of this, he asked three times in the routine manner, then slammed down the auction hammer. Then he had someone carry the bronze pot over to Chu Mo.

Chu Mo clearly felt the jade on his neck heat up again. He thought this bronze cauldron was likely a treasure, at the same time, he also sensed Miao Yiniang become a little excited.

He quickly whispered a direct message to her: “Sister, don’t get excited. This thing won’t leave our hands. There’s someone over there secretly watching you, don’t give yourself away.”

Miao Yiniang squeezed Chu Mo's hand, showing she understood.

The recent course of events with the auction had an effect of warming up the market. The auction hall mood also clearly livened up again.

The vision didn't even look back over to their direction. On the stage, Fat Brother grabbed out the second item for auction.

It was a top grade coral sculpture, carved into a person with the surrounding landscape!

This was the kind of item that made people want to fight over it. It was really too beautiful.

The person who carved the coral was certainly a great master. Each detail could be distinguished, even the finest hairs, bringing the style of the coral to the highest level.

This was the secular world after all.

These kinds of things were the most popular!

Because of this, the top grade coral sculpture made people go wild. Everyone on the second floor even started rattling off bids.

Wang Dafa also joined in the contest, but after several bids were called out, especially the ones from the second floor, Wang Dafa

came to a stop.

It could be seen from this one point alone, this was no hillbilly that only knows how to flaunt wealth.

In the end, the coral sculpture was won by a person in the number three Heaven room on the second floor.

As time went on, all types of rare treasures were introduced by Fat Brother. It must be said, Fat Brother was quite eloquent, and his knowledge profound. He told a story for each of the precious objects, and each item became a peerless treasure at his words.

Everyone was also eager to buy. Two hours had passed since the beginning, and not a single item went unsold.

At the very end, the highlight of the day finally arrived.

Fat Brother solemnly stood there, and seriously spoke: “Next, we’ve reached the day’s most important moment. Our final auction is coming soon!”

Chapter 112: Auction Grand Finale

“But before this, I want to ask everyone. In this world.....what is the most precious thing?” The ball-like Fat Brother started setting the mood on the stage, making the crowd below anxious.

Wang Dafa shouted: “Power! Wealth! Women!”

Although several people think this way, they dare not say it in public. Because of this, several onlookers scoffed when Wang Dafa finished speaking.

A soft and pleasant woman’s voice came from the second floor: “I think the most precious thing in the world is unobtainable, and already lost.”

The auction hall immediately quieted down when these words were spoken. Everyone seemed to be deep in thought.

Then, the crowd couldn’t help but applaud.

Unobtainable.....already lost.....It was too logical, simply wisdom!

Wang Dafa somewhat embarrassingly sat down. He mumbled to the two women at his side: “What unobtainable already lost thing.....you can’t have the unobtainable! The lost is forgotten! Happily cherishing the moment is the true treasure!”

But hardly anyone heard Wang Dafa's words. Even the ones who did just looked down upon him——You hillbilly, are you trying to utter something pleasant?

The two glamorous women covered their mouths and slightly smiled. They both affectionately looked at Wang Dafa. Other people don't understand the goodness of Wang Dafa, but it was quite evident to them.....This upstart hillbilly was a shrewd powerful man behind the facade.

Was he merely Yellow Flame City's lumber king? Wrong! He was the lumber king of Da Xia! And the ship manufacturing king!

Which of these ordinary men had such insight?

However, the youth behind the smiling mask was actually quite amazing.....

Fat Brother noticed the atmosphere heat up once again from the stage. He laughed and said: "The young lady from the second floor spoke quite well. Unobtainable, and already lost. As far as the already lost.....I've got no way to help you recover it. However, the last item we auction today will be something unobtainable!"

The rowdy first floor quieted down all of a sudden.

Who knows what made them calm down, but these people voluntarily shut their mouths. They didn't even breathe, and just stared with glowing eyes at Fat Brother like he was a piece of meat!

Unobtainable.....

There weren't many things in this world that could be called unobtainable.

It's commonly said that money makes the world go round. In the eyes of these Yellow Flame City citizens, there was nothing truly unobtainable. Yet Fat Brother dared speak this way, so he must have confidence.

The item was very likely a pill from one of the sects. These pills can extend life, cure illness, and even replenish [yin and kidney](#) function.....each of these pills made people go wild.

[TL: Yin and kidneys are very important in Chinese medicine. You can read a decent article about it [here](#).]

Fat Brother saw that the mood was set just about right. He laughingly said: "I recently asked everyone what is the most precious thing in the world. Actually, I have my own answer. That is health! All of you look, my body will soon become a ball! Anyone else would already be plagued by illness. They probably couldn't even provide for themselves."

Fat Brother sighed, and spoke with a tinge of emotion: "But even now, I can jump around on the stage, and be an auctioneer for everyone. Do you know the reason? It's because I have a way to make myself healthy!"

The auction hall became even more quiet. The top grade sect pills were extremely rare at the auction house, and extremely limited. A wild competition ensued every time the auction house put one up for bid, and caused a storm of blood outside.

Because these things caused bloodshed, they were even rarer in recent years.

“Does everyone believe today’s grand finale is a pill?” Fat Brother mysteriously smiled: “Absolutely wrong!”

“Damn!”

“Fuck!”

“Are you kidding?”

“Are you messing with us?”

The hall was originally so quiet that you could hear a pin drop, but it suddenly became like a vegetable market. Several people couldn’t help but shout curses.

It was actually Fat Brother setting up the cliffhanger too well. He made everyone extremely anxious, and then dropped them into the abyss. Not cursing him would be weird.

Chu Mo couldn’t help but raise his head and wryly smile. He

whispered: “This guy.....he is truly seeking abuse.”

Chu Yan couldn't help but rock her head and say: “Really, he made everyone anticipate, and then it's not true. He deserves curses!”

Fat Brother chuckled on the stage at this time: “Don't worry everyone. Listen to me a moment. I guarantee everyone will like today's grand finale! It isn't a pill from a sect, but the effect.....is no less than the sect pills! And is even stronger!”

The cursing voices in the clamoring hall came to a screeching halt.

Everyone looked to Fat Brother. And their eyes heated up once again.

Fat Brother finally revealed the secret with a loud voice: “Bring out the fourth rank Yuan beast.....the treasures of the Red Eye Ice Python's body. Bring it to the stage one by one! Let everyone have a look!

Pairs of strong young men carried the meat, bones, and skin of the Red Eye Ice Python up to the stage.

At the very end, eight men walked onto the stage while carrying the enormous snake head.

Rumble!

The auction hall immediately went into an uproar. The people couldn't help but let out a burst of low-pitched screams.

They knew the snake died some time ago, but the enormous head still carried an ice-cold aura, making the onlookers tremble with fear.

This.....was mighty pressure!

The mighty pressure that belongs to a fourth rank Yuan beast!

Even if it was dead, the people were so pressured that they couldn't breathe.

Fat Brother carefully approached the enormous snake head. He then reached up, and pretended to wipe the sweat from his brow. He said: "This thing.....is truly terrifying! Do you see? A fourth rank Yuan beast! It's even rarely seen in the sects. Most sect disciples don't have the strength to hunt this level of beast. Therefore, although it isn't a pill, I say it's even better. Do you disagree?"

The hall was dead quiet. No one uttered a word. The enormous snake head was enough to answer the question.

The entire body of the the Yuan beast was a treasure!

This was no exaggeration. Even the dung of a fourth rank Yuan beast was treasured!

Don't even mention the Red Eye Ice Python, which was rare among fourth rank Yuan beasts!

“Three to five scales can at least double the defense of a breastplate!”

“If used as light armor, then it will be impenetrable. This is a true treasure to protect your life!”

“Its flesh and bones can be steeped in wine. After drinking, life will extend, physique will improve, and hundreds of diseases can be prevented!”

“Let me ask, if this isn't a treasure.....then what could be called a treasure?”

“The military hunted down a Red Eye Ice Python six or seven years ago. It caused a sensation at that time, and even sect members participated in the bidding. And before that day, our Yellow Flame City had never seen such a thing! And it has never appeared since that time.”

“But today.....it has returned! Do you wish to miss the opportunity?”

Fat Brother's spittle splashed everywhere on the stage, seemingly

talking the fourth rank Yuan beast up to be a ninth rank one.

Chu Mo blushed a little while listening, and curled his lips somewhat in disapproval.

But practically everyone in the auction hall, including Chu Yan and Miao Yiniang.....they all were short of breath. They rigidly stared at the goods emitting a mighty ice-cold pressure on the stage.

Chu Mo was somewhat dumbstruck. He mumbled: “Is it really that good?”

Chapter 113: Wild Competition

Miao Yiniang looked with disbelief at Chu Mo: “My master..... you really don’t understand, or are you playing dumb? It’s a fourth rank Yuan beast! Do you think it is a common lion?”

“What about a fourth rank Yuan beast?” Chu Mo cast the words out of his mouth, feeling it beneath himself. He thought: ‘I’m the one who killed this fourth rank Yuan beast.....’

“Heavens.....” Miao Yiniang, with hand on forehead, speechlessly looked at Chu Mo: “Young master, I really don’t know how to tell you. A fourth rank Yuan beast, it’s theoretically about the same as a human of the fourth rank.....an iron bone realm cultivator. But its true power far exceeds an iron bone realm cultivator! This is no exaggeration! A fourth rank Yuan beast can easily kill three or four iron bone cultivators at the same rank!

Miao Yiniang sighed: “That’s how amazing the normal fourth rank Yuan beasts are, and the Red Eye Ice Python.....is far stronger than the normal fourth rank Yuan beast! It has the terrifying power invokes fear. The beast can massacre an entire city!”

Chu Yan softly said from the side: “I heard the military paid a similar price when they hunted the Red Eye Ice Python!”

Miao Yiniang looked at Chu Yan, and simply said: “Yes ah, ask your family’s noble son about this. He is the most familiar.”

Chu Mo laughed, and looked at the perplexed Chu Yan: “I’ll tell

you when we return.”

Chu Mo was still in disguise, so they didn't want to reveal too much. Luckily no one paid attention to the three people in the corner. They all rigidly stared at the Red Eye Ice Python on the stage.

Chu Mo mumbled: “Even if it is hard to hunt, how does that explain the issue?”

Miao Yiniang speechlessly sighed: “First, this thing is extremely rare. It's no easy task for even the large sects to seize a Red Eye Ice Python. Given that they do catch one, they certainly won't let the body and scales circulate outside the sect!”

“Second, each part of the Red Eye Ice Python is priceless. Do you think Fat Brother is trying to scam people? You're dead wrong! The effects are not exaggerated in the slightest!” Miao Yiniang sighed again: “I really don't know who is that amazing, that they could actually hunt such a formidable Yuan beast. What's even more unbelievable.....they actually put it up for auction.....it's truly a waste!”

Chu Mo couldn't help but return a look of superiority. He actually told Miao Yiniang that he hunted a few Yuan beasts before, but he gave them to one-armed uncle to put up for auction. Chu Mo wasn't the type that liked to show off, so he never told her too many details.

How could Miao Yiniang ever think the wasteful person she

mentioned was sitting right beside her?

Fat Brother already started the auction on the stage at this time. He excitedly shouted: “And now, we will start selling a tendon of the Red Eye Ice Python! Make no mistake, it’s a whole tendon! I don’t need to tell you all the effectiveness of it. Use it for a bowstring.....and it will be a godly bow. Seep it in wine, and it will nourish the body. The starting price is.....five thousand gold!”

“He’s trying to swindle everyone.....” Chu Mo mumbled.

Dozens of people in the auction hall started raising their paddle before Chu Mo even finished his words.

“Six thousand gold liang!”

“Seven thousand liang!”

“I, Han Xiaoshan, bid ten thousand gold liang! I, Han Xiaoshan, desire this Red Eye Ice Python tendon! Remember I’m Han Xiaoshan! So long as you know what’s good for you, you won’t battle with me. You will be very grateful!”

“Pah, who is Xiaoshan? Never heard of him. I bid twelve thousand gold liang!”

“I bid thirteen thousand!”

“Thirteen thousand five hundred!”

Chu Mo was stupefied while watching the event. The corners of his mouth pulled up, and his eyes filled with disbelief: “Are these people crazy?”

No one beside him responded. Chu Mo looked to his side. The girls were hidden by their veils, but he could still sense the excitement through them.

Sensing Chu Mo’s vision, Miao Yiniang regretfully spoke: “Too expensive.....otherwise I would really buy it.”

“What do you want it for?” Chu Mo gave a look of superiority, and thought: ‘For illness? You are a cultivator, you have no need! Nourish the yin and repair kidneys? You are already beautiful and full of life.....so you don’t need that either. Increase your lifespan? So long as Miao Yiniang continues cultivating, then her life will certainly be much longer than a normal person. Why would you need this to extend your life?’

Who knows why, but Miao Yiniang didn’t even think before directly speaking: “To give you!”

“Give.....give me?” Chu Mo didn’t respond for a moment, but he soon felt touched. He said while smiling to Miao Yiniang: “No need, I put this thing up for auction. We should return and talk about this later. There’s nothing to see here. Let’s go.”

Miao Yiniang stared dumbstruck at Chu Mo. She couldn't tell if Chu Mo was making a joke or not.

But soon after, Miao Yiniang stood up, and shook her head in amazement. She was probably scolding Chu Mo on the inside about what a waste he was.

Chu Yan saw the two stand up, so she also followed suit. She still looked infatuated at the items stage.

At this time, the Red Eye Ice Python tendon already reached a price of twenty thousand gold liang!”

Insane!

All insane!

Chu Mo shook his head, and he quietly left the auction house with the two women while carrying the bronze cauldron.

Right when they were just about to disappear, two other people stood up inside the auction house. They lowered their heads, and quickly departed while keeping a very low-profile.

Chu Mo quickly pulled Miao Yiniang and Chu Yan into a small alley after leaving the gate. He completely ignored the carriage waiting there.

As a person that grew up in Yellow Flame City, Chu Mo was very familiar with every corner.

He quickly lead the two girls through the alley, and he carried the bronze cauldron in hand the whole time. He wasn't afraid of the two girls knowing he had a storage space, but he didn't want the pursuers to know!

Chu Mo held a type of intuition. He could catch the people staring at Miao Yiniang off guard if they suddenly departed, but the person or people staring.....would certainly pursue.

However, Chu Mo didn't want to be too passive. Having the enemy lead you along by the nose can leave an unpleasant feeling. He wanted to seize the initiative. If they fight.....then it would be on his territory!

The two girls already understood, and were ready for anything. Otherwise, Chu Mo wouldn't dare react this way. That's why no one asked anything, and quickly followed Chu Mo's quick advance.

At last, they came to an abandoned region within the city. This place was originally a poor district, but a government official wanted to renovate it into a large garden. The people living here were all moved to the government official's region, and given accommodations several times better than before. Because of this, the poor people here all departed willingly.

This place had already been abandoned for half a year. Apart for a few homeless people drifting in and out, there were practically

no signs of habitation.

Chu Mo and the girls just arrived, and the two chasing figures picked up speed.

They appeared before the three in an instant, and blocked their way.

The two were completely covered in black cloaks. Even the hoods completely covered their faces.

One of the people looked at Miao Yiniang, and said in a low voice: “Surviving scum of the Misty Palace, hand over the scripture that was passed down, and your life will be spared!”

Chapter 114: Betrayal

Miao Yiniang coldly stared at the two men wearing black cloaks: “What Misty Palace? I don’t understand what you’re saying?”

The man who just spoke disdainfully laughed: “Okay, Miao Yiniang, we already know who you are, and have enough proof to show you are from the Misty Palace. Do you think we’re bored? And we just came to seek trouble?”

A trace of rage flashed across Miao Yiniang’s eyes: “Do you have a grudge with the Misty Palace?”

“No grudge.” The man said.

“Do you have a grudge with me?” Miao Yiniang asked.

The man sneered: “Okay, stop with the useless words. We have no grudge with the Misty Place, and have no grudge or hatred with you. We only want the heritage of the Misty Palace. You could say we are robbers, and have come to rob!”

“Heavens.....you actually dare say such shameless words so logically.” Chu Yan said from the side. She was definitely not a coward, and became very angry upon seeing Miao Yiniang being bullied. She couldn’t help but add an insult.

“This has nothing to do with you little girl. You had best scram!” The man coldly said.

The other man wearing a cloak didn't speak the whole time, and just calmly stood there.

Chu Mo looked at the two, and was a little startled on the inside. The Vermilion Bird continent was quite a distance away, and they must have made a long and arduous journey. How did these men come seeking here? And it looks like they were in Yellow Flame City for more than a few days. They probably investigated all kinds of information on Miao Yiniang.

“How did you find me?” Miao Yiniang looked at the two men: “My current appearance is completely different from back then, and this place is extremely far away from the Vermilion Bird continent.....”

The man who spoke simply smiled: “There is nothing truly difficult in the world. There is only determination. You twelve sisters separated and escaped with twelve storage rings. It all seemed very secretive. Nobody should be able to find you all right? But you forgot one thing, that is.....somebody selling you out!”

Miao Yiniang's pupils slightly shrank, and she mumbled: “Sell out? There's no one left in the Misty Palace. Who could sell us out?”

The man chuckled: “Of course it's one of your twelve sisters!”

“Not possible!” Miao Yiniang furiously looked at the man: “You lie!”

The man curled his lips and said: “What’s the point in lying to you? There’s no one even looking for you these days. The four continents are vast and split into the Azure Dragon, Vermilion Bird, White Tiger, and Black Turtle continents, and finding all of you seems like finding a needle in the ocean. However, that’s not the case! You are all little darlings of the sects. Once you enter the secular world.....nine times out of ten you choose a top level city!”

Miao Yiniang’s complexion slightly changed because of what the man said.

In that time, the twelve sisters didn’t know where they each were going, but they made a pact. They would each settle in the top cities of each country. When they met later, they would use a code word for identification.

The man simply smiled: “This is the first mistake all of you made. The second mistake is that you are all female sect disciples, and all proud women. In your eyes, women should be this outstanding, but you all forgot one thing. In this world.....the status of women isn’t as high as you think!”

The man shrugged his shoulders and laughed: “Look, first you chose big cities, then became outstanding women in the cities.....having these two conditions, doesn’t it become easy to find all of you?”

Chu Mo was secretly alarmed. He didn’t know if the man is too clever, or if everyone came to this conclusion.

If everyone could come to this conclusion.....then that was too terrifying. He feared the fate of Miao Yiniang's sisters.....was anything but good.

“Of course, I must admit, you are the most clever of your sisters, and the most low-key! We have been searching for you for several years. Not to mention that we searched Yellow Flame City several times. We even investigated you after you took over the Gluttonous Ogre.” The man sighed: “It’s a pity we couldn’t completely confirm your identity at that time. You never showed any wild schemes or attempts at power.”

Chu Mo heart slightly trembled. He clearly understood where the problem came from.

‘It must be because I made Yiniang in charge of establishing my power. This made the men sense something.....’ Chu Mo blamed himself on the inside.

Sure enough, the man continued speaking: “However, your most recent actions made us certain. You.....are one of the twelve disciples that fled the Misty Palace!”

Miao Yiniang's eyes flickered, and she apathetically spoke: “I must admit, your observation skill is extremely powerful, and you have quite an accurate ability to judge. But what does this have to do with my sister's betrayal? I won't allow you to slander my sisters.”

The man laughed a moment, and then he said: “Really? Slander? Do you know what brought us to the final determination?”

Miao Yiniang didn’t speak. She only coldly stared at the man who spoke half-truths.

The always silent man at the side finally lowered his hood, revealing an ordinary looking male’s face. Then the man raised his hand, and began softly tearing at his face.....an elaborate skin-tight mask was ripped away, revealing a beautiful woman’s face.

This man.....was actually a woman!

Miao Yiniang stared dumbstruck at the woman, and her expression filled with disbelief.

The woman wearing the cloak casually tossed the mask to the side, and simply said: “Little sister Yiniang, don’t you recognize me?”

“You, you are Sun Yifei. Big sister Yifei?” Miao Yiniang’s eyes completely filled with disbelief while looking at the woman: “You, how could you? Were you working with them? This.....this isn’t true!”

Miao Yiniang couldn’t help but slightly falter. Seeing her senior sister after all these years should be a happy moment, but she never expected her senior sister’s betrayal. And she also brought a foe to grab her.....this was simply an enormous blow to Miao

Yiniang.

Miao Yiniang could recognize her right away. Sun Yifei used to be the most talented disciple of the whole Misty Palace!

Sun Yifei was already at the Yuan closure when the Misty Palace collapsed, and the twelve disciples went their separate ways. Now after all these years, she could only have gotten stronger.

“Betray?” I didn’t betray.” Sun Yifei simply looked at Miao Yiniang and spoke: “The older generation spoke to us back then. They said to not seek revenge, and only let the heritage continue on, even if we have endless achievements.....in fact these words are telling us to live well, and I live very well.”

The man reached out at this time, and he rested a hand on Sun Yifei’s waist. He laughed and said: “Yes ah, to live.....the most important thing is happiness!”

Chapter 115: Vermilion Bird Association

Miao Yiniang didn't dare believe as she looked at Sun Yifei. She was so sorrowful that she almost couldn't speak.

The big sister from the same sect, the one she respected since youth, deliberately plotted and betrayed. An extremely bitter taste spread within Miao Yiniang.

“Little sister Yiniang. I'm telling you the truth, the Misty Palace.....is no longer restorable. It is practically impossible for us twelve to rebuild the Misty Palace. The six largest sects of the Vermilion Bird Continent will never let the name Misty Palace appear in this world again.” Sun Yifei spoke with an indifferent tone. Then she said to Miao Yiniang: “I believe you must certainly understand this reasoning. You were able to make Gluttonous Ogre into the number one restaurant in Da Xia, so you must be more clever and outstanding than I believed.”

“Even if we can't rebuild, does it mean you must betray us?” Miao Yiniang asked Sun Yifei.

Sun Yifei scoffed. A disdainful expression flashed across her pretty face: “What betrayal? Who have I betrayed? You? Or the Misty Palace? The Misty Palace is long gone.....and has become history. What betrayal can there be? Finding you today, and the scripture in your hands.....is just one of our goals.”

“What else do you want?” Miao Yiniang's feelings suddenly stabilized. A touch of sarcasm spread across her delicate face: “Do

you have designs for the Gluttonous Ogre's business? Or do you want me?"

"Miao Yiniang, I hope you can understand your current plight. Yifei is being sincere with you. She's treating you as a younger sister disciple. But this.....doesn't mean you have the qualifications to challenge us." The still unidentified man interjected from the side.

"What sincerity? You're treating me as a little sister disciple?" Miao Yiniang revealed an extremely odd smile. She nodded: "Big sister Yifei, I wish to listen to you speak."

Sun Yifei nodded, and earnestly spoke: "First, you have seen for yourself. This heritage holds no significance while in our hands! Without a sect's support, it's practically impossible for us to increase realms. After all these years, you've only broken through the Yuan closure right?"

Miao Yiniang nodded, and didn't say a word.

"Therefore, it would be better to take this heritage and spread it!" Sun Yifei said.

Miao Yiniang smiled: "Let it spread into the enemy's hand?"

"They aren't our enemies." Sun Yifei looked to the man at her side. Her face showed an extremely sweet color: "They didn't participate in the the Misty Palace siege. This is the second thing I

wanted to tell you. I want you to join the Vermilion Bird Association with me!”

“Vermilion Bird Association?” Miao Yiniang’s brow slightly wrinkled. This powerful name made her feel very strange. At the same time, she held a type of sentiment. This group seems very arrogant. They dare use the name Vermilion Bird Association among the six big powers of the Vermilion Bird continent. Either they are courting death, or.....they have the power to back it up.

“Yes, the Vermilion Bird Association. It is the most powerful of the Vermilion Bird continent! If you still want revenge, then you might have a change after joining.” Sun Yifei looked at Miao Yiniang: “At the same time, I can introduce you to a powerful man! A man who can really protect you! Instead of.....a useless person not worth looking at.”

Sun Yifei glanced at Chu Mo as she spoke. From beginning to end, Sun Yifei and the man to her side didn’t look at Chu Mo and Chu Yan once. It was like the two didn’t exist in their eyes.

“And then?” A dangerous light flashed in Miao Yiniang’s eyes. People who knew Miao Yiniang well should know, she was furious!

Miao Yiniang could endure if Sun Yifei speaking humiliating words to her. But to humiliate Chu Mo.....she couldn’t endure that no matter what.

“Then, we can take your Gluttonous Ogre to the Vermilion Bird Association. You don’t need to worry about your business being

snatched away. It will still be yours! You can earn profits, and still keep twenty percent!” Sun Yifei carried an expression of ‘I’m treating you well’: “Don’t feel hurt. Although you will hand over eighty percent of the profit, you will also have the large resources of the Vermilion Bird Association! You should understand how priceless resources are in the secular world!”

The man next to Sun Yifei said: “Since we are so bold in coming to find you, that should speak to our absolute confidence, and the power we have! Miao Yiniang, you should carefully think. We don’t even place the Azure Dragon Court in our eyes.....”

The man seemed to sense that he spoke too much, and promptly stopped here.

Chu Mo and Miao Yiniang yet heard a crucial piece, the Azure Dragon Court!

The Vermilion Bird continent had the Vermilion Bird Association, and the Azure Dragon continent had the Azure Dragon Court. It was hard to say which of these powers was stronger, but few spoke little of them.

Miao Yiniang looked at Sun Yifei, and simply said: “Then you all deliberately released the Medicine King Cauldron for auction today?”

Sun Yifei slightly smiled, and calmly nodded: “Not bad. Otherwise how could such a precious treasure be gotten so easily? I carried the Medicine King Cauldron back then. You have grown a

little taller these days, but your body shape hasn't changed much. The details have hardly changed. Yes, you are even more beautiful than before! I wanted to confirm your status, so I could only use the Medicine King Cauldron. Ha ha.....how could a disciple from the Misty Palace not know this treasure?

“How could you be certain I would take it?” Miao Yiniang asked.

Sun Yifei laughed: “In fact, I wasn't too certain. The main reason we came this time is because a large amount of Yuan beast materials appeared at the Windcloud auction house. A couple of those Yuan beast materials are highly demanded in the large sects. Therefore, we wanted to make a few bids and return. Furthermore, we weren't the only power who came this time. Several of the Azure Dragon continent sent people.

“So, confirming my identity was just an added bonus for you?” Miao Yiniang plainly asked.

“No, our main goal was still to find you. The treasures of the Yuan beast are rare, but not as important as you. After all, the Misty Palace heritage is one of a kind! And Yuan beast materials will appear sooner or later.” Sun Yifei earnestly spoke.

Miao Yiniang appeared extremely sarcastic: “So I ought to feel honored huh? Big sister Yifei.....this is the last time I call you that. Do you think your actions are worthy of the Misty Palace?”

Sun Yifei sneered: “I only want to be worthy of myself!”

“Miao Yiniang, there’s no need to be mysterious with your words. Yifei has already told you everything. Now it is time for you to make a decision.” The man coldly spoke. Then he said: “Right, first hand over the Medicine King Cauldron.”

“Your.....Medicine King Cauldron?” Chu Mo had been quietly standing there the whole time, but now he suddenly laughed. The bronze cauldron in his hands disappeared in an instant. Chu Mo looked over at the opposing male and female. He shrugged, spread his hands wide, and innocently spoke: “It isn’t here.”

“Storage ring?” Sun Yifei began to squint. She faintly smiled at Miao Yiniang: “I never imagined.....you gave your most precious thing to this little pretty boy. He appears to really love martial arts. Truly interesting! Brother Hua Nan, kill the boy first!”

Chapter 116: One Blade

Miao Yiniang enraged. She coldly stared at Sun Yifei, and angrily said: “Stop!”

Sun Yifei indifferently smiled: “Yo, my little sister, why so angry? Don’t get mad.....ha ha, it’s very simple. If you wish for the one you love to live, then you only need to agree to big sister’s conditions. He will naturally be able to live. Otherwise.....”

The light in Sun Yifei’s pupils grew cold. She apathetically said: “He will die!”

Miao Yiniang sucked in a deep breath, then said: “Sun Yifei, this is something between you and me. This has nothing to do with them. Let them go, then I’ll go with you!”

“Go with me? You mean.....you agree?” Sun Yifei’s eyebrow raised.

Miao Yiniang said: “Promise or not, what you said doesn’t work. I want to meet your superiors!”

Distain flashed within Sun Yifei’s pupils: “There’s no need. Us two can handle this matter.”

Miao Yiniang casually spoke: “Really? Gluttonous Ogre earns one million silver liang every year. Will you be the boss?”

Sun Yifei was slightly shocked. A color of greed immediately shined in her eyes. Even the man that constantly stayed hidden under the hood slightly raised his head, seeming a little astonished.

They investigated Miao Yiniang very thoroughly in the past, and they knew Gluttonous Ogre had really good business. However, they never expected it could be this profitable!

One million silver liang a year.....even the Vermilion Bird Association couldn't idly stand by. Sun Yifei and Hua Nan really don't have the qualifications to negotiate this level of business.

But.....on the chance that they can contract the deal, then.....the benefits would be incalculable!

They could even promote to silver deacons!

They could obtain an astonishing amount of resources at that grade.

The Vermilion Bird Association grades were extremely strict, and clearly separated. The highest level.....was naturally the Vermilion Bird Association President. The rest of the members split into the gold, silver, bronze, and black iron grades for Yuan stone distribution.

Sun Yifei and Hua Nan were both bronze rank stewards. They were considered middle-ranking in the Vermilion Bird Association. They must give enormous contributions to the Vermilion Bird

Association if they want to promote to the silver rank. However, that is very difficult.

Sun Yifei gave her entire portion of the heritage to the Vermilion Bird Association back then, and she was only able to obtain a bronze rank assessment. If she could gather all twelve pieces of the heritage passed down by the Misty Palace, then she could directly promote to the gold rank!

But that was nearly impossible. Sun Yifei also never dreamed about it.

But this time, if she could bring back Miao Yiniang's heritage, and also a year's worth of profit from the business, then she should break into the silver grade.

This was simply a heavenly surprise to Sun Yifei and Hua Nan!

So, in the depths of her heart, she already took this contribution as her own.

Sun Yifei slightly smiled to Miao Yiniang because of this: "Of course. Your big sister is a person of status in the Vermilion Bird Association. So stop struggling little sister, and don't have any delusional fantasies. It's useless! I have spoken honestly with you. My current realm already far surpasses your own. I have already reached the middle of the fourth realm. And Hua Nan.....his power has already reached the peak of the fifth realm! If he wants to kill you all, it would be as easy as turning his hand!"

Chu Mo used his jade to inspect the two while Sun Yifei spoke. Sun Yifei wasn't lying. She really was at the middle of the fourth realm, and the man really was a cultivator at the fifth realm's peak.

‘Today is a hard day to be good!’ Chu Mo thought.

这种时候, 他知道, 是他站出来的时候了, 不然的话, 妙一娘除了答应他们, 别无选择。

Chu Mo knew he must stand up at this time. Otherwise, Miao Yiniang promising them was the only choice.

Chu Mo took a step forward, and looked to Sun Yifei and the man: “This.....is Yellow Flame City!”

“So what?” Sun Yifei coldly laughed: “What about Yellow Flame City? Do you think you are a prince? Do you have a sect's protection?”

“You misunderstand.” Chu Mo looked at Sun Yifei, and icily spoke: “I want you to know your burial site!” Chu Mo glanced at Miao Yiniang: “Do you oppose me killing her?”

Miao Yiniang sighed: “Try your best to not kill her.....no matter what was said, she is still my elder sister.”

Sun Yifei sighed: “Little sister Yiniang, you are forcing us. There’s nothing left to say. Brother Hua Nan, go ahead. First kill the boy, then kill that maiden. As for my little sister.....leave her! I will make her understand, leaving with us is the path.”

“Ha ha ha ha ha!” Hua Nan suddenly laughed wildly. He pulled back his hood, revealing an extremely young face. He wasn’t especially handsome, but he was worth a second look. His eyes were very engaging, and they filled with disdain towards Chu Mo: “A secular world commoner actually dares be this arrogant? The ignorant are truly fearless! He doesn’t know the immensity of the heavens and the earth! Look at my face.....remember, I am Hua Nan! I’m twenty-seven years old, and I’m at the fifth rank peak!”

“Good.” A disdainful smile spread across Hua Nan’s face. He started taking large steps towards Chu Mo

One step, two steps, three steps.....suddenly the gaps between steps increased!

Hua Nan’s entire body seemed to disappear in the air, very quickly reaching a high degree of speed.

Chu Mo felt a terrifying amount of power press towards him like a large mountain.

This young man’s power was far greater than the old man’s that day!

“Shadowless Step, Chopping Dragon Palm!”

Hua Nan’s ice-cold voice passed through the empty sky.

Chu Mo faced the direction that Hua Nan was charging from, and plainly watched. Then.....he raised his right arm.

Hua Nan’s expression showed that this was beneath his dignity!

Chu Mo was a mantis trying to stop a chariot!

Even an enormous boulder couldn’t stop his Dragon Chopping Palm, and Chu Mo was actually going to use an arm?

Hua Nan watched the reckless commoner try to block his palm. The corners of his mouth slightly raised, revealing an ice-cold smile.

Boom!

A muffled bang echoed.

Chu Mo retreated back seven or eight steps. His complexion was somewhat pale. The surging Yuan power of a rank five cultivator was indeed formidable. Even though Chu Mo’s body was full of Yuan power this time, he still felt a little overwhelmed.

But.....Hua Nan was miserable!

He encountered the world's most abnormal fourth rank cultivator.

A full body bone refinement!

Bones like diamond!

Don't mention a peak fifth rank iron blood cultivator like him, even a golden stone cultivator would have a tough time harming Chu Mo!

Hiss!

A cool breath was forced from Hua Nan's mouth. His eyes appeared both shocked and furious while staring at Chu Mo. He then desperately flung his right hand.

"Painful?" Chu Mo smiled and asked

"Little thing, you're seeking death!" Hua Nan roared, and pulled out a sword from behind, stabbing it straight towards Chu Mo.

"Light Streaming Sword!"

The double edge sword flowed like a ray of light! Causing onlookers to be dazzled!

Qiang!

An enormously loud ring sounded. The sword in Hua Nan's hand snapped.

“My turn?” Chu Mo said. Then he acted at the same time: “One blade.”

Soon after, a blade light flashed across. The sword arm of Hua Nan flopped to the ground. Blood immediately started to drip out of the severed limb.

Hua Nan was entirely stupefied. He was a thousand man killing cultivator that reached the fifth realm at the age of twenty-seven, and he was a bronze grade of the Vermilion Bird Association. He never suffered such a large defeat his whole life.

He simply didn't dare believe his eyes. He must be dreaming!

At this time, the opponent's blade already pointed towards his brow——

Chapter 117: Dove And Hawk

After the experience honed on the grasslands, Chu Mo clearly understood one thing. Releasing the tiger back into the wild will only bring future troubles. He must thoroughly dispose the man in one fell swoop!

Hua Nan seemed to finally come back to his senses, and furiously roared like mad. His body immediately flew out, and then turned into a flowing stream of light, disappearing from Chu Mo's line of sight.

The severed arm still remained on the ground, and a dull trace of blood still lingered in the air.

Chu Mo couldn't help but softly sigh, then mumble: "The gap in realm still exists. If we were at the same level, then how could you run right before my eyes?"

He glanced over at Sun Yifei while mumbling. She was as dumbstruck as a wooden chicken.

"Ah!" Sun Yifei let out an extremely terrified shriek. Then she turned and ran! She advanced in the direction Hua Nan escaped, and fled like mad.

Cho Mo shook his head. He looked at Miao Yiniang and said: "They both ran."

Miao Yiniang looked at Chu Mo, but didn't say anything.

Chu Yan's pair of beautiful eyes fell upon Chu Mo, and filled with admiration.

Chu Mo defeated the old man that came to assassinate him on new year's night. One could say Chu Mo was lucky. He relied on the opponent's underestimation of him, but today Chu Mo merely used one slash in a direct fight, cutting off a fifth rank cultivators arm. Luck really couldn't be used as an excuse now.

This was power!

A truly matchless fighting strength!

This was the crushing pressure of martial skill!

"Sorry, I have confidence in defeating them, but I don't have confidence in stopping their escape." Chu Mo regrettably said.

Miao Yiniang looked at Chu Mo, but she still stayed silent.

Chu Mo's mouth twitched, and he said: "Big sister.....you....."

Chu Mo didn't finish speaking before Miao Yiniang suddenly pushed into his arms, and tightly held onto him. Chu Mo only sensed a fragrant wind flow up, then it was followed by a soft body in his embrace.

“Oh.....big sister, are you okay?” Chu Mo was distracted a moment, then he softly started to pat Miao Yiniang’s back.

Miao Yiniang still didn’t speak. She only tightly squeezed onto Chu Mo’s waist.

Chu Mo undoubtedly had the body of an adult at this time. Miao Yiniang looked a little cute and helpless when she hugged him, and they seemed to match extremely well.

Miao Yiniang finally loosened up on Chu Mo after a long time. Her face was scarlet colored, and she whispered: “Can we go back?”

Chu Mo new the events today made Miao Yiniang quite upset. She was sold out and plotted against by her sect sister. It was the same as being sold out by her closest friend, and her frame of mind was certainly off.

He nodded, and silently led the two women back. Chu Mo didn’t bring them to Gluttonous Ogre orv the Fan Household. He was still disguised like another person after all, so he brought them to another house in Yellow Flame City.

This was one of the many houses Xu Fufu bought two years ago.

This area was extremely peaceful. It would be very difficult for most people to find the place. Moreover, Xu Fufu also dug out an

enormous basement in this separate house. He stored enough resources for someone to live for several months.

“Big sister, don’t go back to Gluttonous Ogre for the time being. They suffered a loss, and won’t rest easily.” Chu Mo softly spoke to Miao Yiniang.

“Then what about our organization?” Miao Yiniang clearly understood she shouldn’t appear in public, but she wasn’t ready to drop the power that she just established.

Chu Mo shook his head: “Nothing is more important than your safety. You also don’t need to worry. Those people are strong, but they won’t dare be too excessive within Yellow Flame City. After all, this is royal territory! Wait for me to go investigate the Vermilion Bird Association. I will see what kind of influence they hold in Yellow Flame City. Then we will think of a way to eradicate their power here.”

“I can’t hide in here forever.” Miao Yiniang said in a low voice: “Continuing on like this isn’t a possibility.”

Chu Mo said: “It won’t be too long. Don’t worry!” Chu Mo pulled out a pill from his robes as he spoke. He looked at Miao Yiniang and said: “Big sister, you know there are pills that can increase realms. However, using pills to increase your realm is the greatest corruption.”

Miao Yiniang was slightly startled. She immediately said: “I know. There are pills in this world that can increase a realm

directly to the golden stone state. But if you use this method, then the golden stone state is the final resting point. There is practically no way to enter the intent refinement phase without experiencing bone and body refinement.”

Chu Mo nodded: “Big sister knows this better than I. Right now I hold a pill in my hands that can increase a realm straight to the golden stone state!”

“What?” Miao Yiniang was completely shocked. She didn’t dare believe Chu Mo and said: “How is this possible? The pills that can increase a person’s realm to the golden stone state.....they exist, but they are incredibly difficult to produce. Even top pill refinement masters in the large sects don’t have a guaranteed success rate. They only succeed once out of every ten tries.....and that is already considered amazing. How could you possibly..... have one in your hands?”

Chu Mo laughed: “Big sister, did you forget about me refining medicine for Xia Jing?”

Miao Yiniang was stupefied for a moment, then she immediately nodded: “You can really refine pills like these?”

Chu Mo raised the pill in his hand: “I guarantee it’s authentic.”

Miao Yiniang breathed slightly anxious. She looked at Chu Mo and said: “Do you know.....the value of a pill like this?”

Chu Yan stood to the side and enviously looked at Miao Yiniang.

Chu Mo saw the expressions of the two women, and he wryly smiled: “Have you thoroughly thought it through before? After eating a pill like this, your lifetime path of cultivation.....will come to an end.”

Miao Yiniang somewhat strangely stared at Chu Mo: “Don’t you know? I will never reach the golden stone realm without this pill.”

Chu Yan softly said from the side: “I’m the same.....”

“Both of you.....” Chu Mo depressingly looked at the two women: “How do you know that? How can you not have any confidence in yourselves?”

Miao Yiniang bitterly smiled: “Who is the the same as you? Can everyone break through the Yuan closure and enter the third realm in half a year? Where are there so many talents in the world? Not to mention I don’t have any resources. Even if I have inexhaustible resources, at best I will reach the golden stone realm in this life.”

Chu Yan said in a low voice: “The golden stone realm.....I don’t even dare imagine it.”

Miao Yiniang nodded her head: “Yes ah, I also don’t dare imagine. So my young master, if you really hold a top grade pill that can increase a realm to the golden stone state, then I really

wish to have it.....The golden stone realm ah! It's simply too tempting! I still can't help but want it, even though I know the value is priceless.

Chu Yan gulped: "I also....."

Chu Mo speechlessly said: "You all won't have regret? For instance, when you see the upper skies, won't you want to fly up higher and take a look?"

Miao Yiniang laughed: "There are many birds that can fly in the sky, but a dove can never fly as high as a hawk."

Chapter 118: Understanding

Miao Yiniang's charming eyes gazed at Chu Mo while she spoke: "This isn't a problem of what I want, but what is feasible. I am only a dove, but my luck is good. I have met a young eagle. I can fly with him in the skies for a number of days. I am already very fortunate. Chu Yan, aren't you the same?"

"Ah, I, yes, yes ah." Chu Yan seemed to be in the middle of thinking something, and was a little distracted. She answered in a flurry when she heard Miao Yiniang ask the question.

Miao Yiniang gave Chu Yan a deep look, then she said to Chu Mo: "Bring it over. My young master, in this life, I am yours!"

"What do you mean mine....." Chu Mo didn't know what in the world was going on, but he handed a pill bottle over to Miao Yiniang: "There are three pills all together. Take one every ten days. This will better allow you to adapt to each realm."

Chu Yan didn't even blink once at the pill bottle. Her eyes were full of envy.

Chu Mo looked to Chu Yan and said: "You don't have bad talent. Do you also wish to take the shortcut?"

Miao Yiniang plainly said: "You must clearly understand yourself, then make a decision."

The already undecided Chu Yan heard these words, and she was slightly startled. She said to Miao Yiniang: “My great young master will certainly break through the void one day. If I wish to follow him, the golden stone realm is obviously not enough.”

Chu Yan looked somewhat amazed at Chu Mo. She was silent for a long time, then quietly said: “That day will come very quickly won’t it?”

“I don’t know.” The thought of Qi Xiaoyu’s absolutely gorgeous face floated up within Chu Mo’s mind, and slightly stung his thoughts.

Chu Yan thought a moment, then captivately smiled: “Noble son, I also want a pill like this. Would you be able to part with one?”

Chu Mo seriously looked at Chu Yan: “You also want the same?”

“Yes!” A dull fog covered over Chu Yan’s pupils. She softly said: “I was only a blade before meeting noble son.....a blade in the hand of the princess. I once said that prince Xia Jing is a bad person, but in fact.....am I a good person myself? I only became a real person after meeting noble son.”

Chu Yan looked at Chu Mo: “Therefore, I will do anything for noble son! Since noble son needs manpower right now, then let me become a blade again! I am happy to do so!”

Chu Mo wrinkled his brow while looking at Chu Yan, and somewhat hesitated.

He received a large amount of medicine from Xia Jing. Apart from the medicine used for the Demon Lord, Chu Mo was able to manufacture about ten pills that can break into the golden stone state. The piece of jade was like an unfathomable pill master. Chu Mo only needed to think of the objective, and the jade would give a precise prescription.

Generally speaking, Chu Mo only needed to obtain the necessary drug ingredients, then.....the jade could theoretically make any pill in the world!

So Chu Mo wasn't wrinkling his brow because he didn't want to part with the pills. He didn't wish for Chu Yan to forsake her potential future breakthroughs.

Chu Yan wasn't the same as Miao Yiniang. Miao Yiniang's current plight was quite ugly. The opponent already knew her identity. Now after suffering a defeat, the people who come again will be even stronger! And she can't keep hiding like this her whole life.

She must confront those strong enemies someday. Because of this, the best method was to increase her realm to the highest level in as short a time as possible. She can peacefully spend her time after the crisis is over.

A sixth rank realm that can move unhindered through the

secular world was already enough!

Intent refinement phase cultivators were already considered almighty in this world. They would practically never appear in the secular world.

“You’ve become human again after so much trouble. Why do you wish to be the blade again?” Chu Mo wrinkled his brow at Chu Yan.

Chu Yan captivately smiled, like the blooming of flowers: “I am more than willing to be noble son’s blade! Moreover, the golden stone realm! A cultivator that can move unhindered through the secular world! Noble son will break through the void one day, and I will still be considered an expert in the secular world! Even the emperor will look highly upon me. If I can live my life in these conditions, then it is worth it!”

Miao Yiniang saw the emotion in Chu Yan’s eyes, and she filled with admiration towards her. She thought: ‘This little girl is too clever! Break through the void? An almighty like that hasn’t appeared in centuries! To actually cultivate there, and walk towards that position step by step, it is the same as climbing the heavens.’

Being able to clearly recognize yourself is an extremely difficult thing. Thing thing worthy of praise was being able to understand this at such a young age.

Miao Yiniang softly spoke to Chu Mo: “Give them to her. In any

case, I will have this little sister to accompany me. When you leave one day.....I won't be so lonely.” Miao Yiniang's heart softly shook when she spoke these words. A voice appeared in the depths of her heart: ‘Will you really not be lonely?’

Chu Mo sighed, then said: “That's good.” He took out another pill bottle, and handed it to Chu Yan as he spoke.

Miao Yiniang became a little dumbstruck. She mumbled to Chu Mo: “Just how many do you have? A single one of these pills would cause Yellow Flame City to sink into madness. My young master.....in this past half year ah.....”

Chu Yan accepted the pill bottle while shaking. Then she earnestly spoke: “Noble son, after one month, I will become the sharpest blade at your side!”

.....

Back at the Fan household, Chu Mo sat on a chair in his room, restored to his original appearance. His thoughts were still somewhat heavy. He didn't know if what he did was right or wrong.

Perhaps Chu Mo had a much broader horizon because his master comes from the Immortal World. It was no exaggeration to say that Chu Mo's horizons were unmatched by anyone in the world!

His understanding comes from his experiences with the Demon Lord.....and all the knowledge he learned, it all came from the Immortal World. Chu Mo never believed that the ninth realm was his final resting point since the very beginning.

Therefore, he also placed this thinking upon the others around him.

This included Xu 2Fu, Miao Yiniang, and Chu Yan. It even included his grandfather and one-armed uncle.

Chu Mo always believed they could do the things he could! What he wants should also be what they want!

But today's events made Chu Mo aware of a problem. His previous way of thinking.....was a little naive!

The innate talents, the horizons, and the mentality of those at his side.....already determined the heights they will achieve.

He could speak with them about breaking through the layer of blue sky, to the Spirit World, the Immortal World, and even.....the Heavens!

But they would still choose to stay at the lowest human world.

Because their hearts were here!

It was also because innate talent determines how high they will climb in the world.

The most precious thing in the world was never the 'unobtainable' and the 'already lost', but rather cherishing the present!

The rich and powerful Wang Dafa could see this completely clearly.

Miao Yiniang and the others could also see.

It was just as Miao Yinaing said. 'There are many birds that can fly in the sky, but a dove can never fly as high as a hawk!'

Moreover, doves may not like flying as high as a hawk!

The scenery is better, but strong winds also blow.

Chu Mo calmly thought in his room for a whole night. The room was entirely dark, and the first ray of light from early morning illuminated his face. Chu Mo let out a deep breath when the golden light shined on his face.

His face revealed a relieved smile.

He thoroughly understood.

Chapter 119: Enormous Wealth

One-armed uncle brought back astonishing news the next day.

After the auction house took out their profits, Chu Mo was left with 360,000 gold liang!

One-armed uncle's hand trembled when he showed the 360,000 gold liang bank note to Chu Mo!

This number not only shocked one-armed uncle, it also shocked Chu Mo. He knew the high level Yuan beasts were worth a fortune, but he never thought the fourth rank Red Eye Ice Python would auction for this kind of price.

This wasn't simply getting rich overnight, this was money dropping directly from the heavens!

No wonder those adventure teams risked their lives to hunt Yuan beasts.

"Young master, hasn't our money.....come too quickly and too much?" One-armed uncle looked at Chu Mo, and his voice quivered a little: "This much money is almost enough to launch a large scale war!"

"I never thought we would have this much money. But like this.....won't our organization have more than enough money for all kinds of expenses?" Chu Mo asked.

One-armed uncle was completely excited: “Isn’t it more than enough? In my opinion.....even if we rapidly expand, it can still be used for ten years! Moreover, this is merely the first batch. According to the initial estimates of the auction house, everything could auction off for a million gold liang. That’s ten million silver liang!”

“We don’t need to rapidly expand. That will easily attract the attention of others. And also.....will be much harder to control. After all, we don’t have that much suitable manpower.” Chu Mo said.

One-armed uncle nodded: “Don’t worry young master. I understand.”

Chu Mo looked at the middle-aged one-armed uncle, and suddenly said: “One-armed uncle, I want to ask your opinion on something.”

One-armed uncle actually had a well known name. He was called [Sui Hongjun](#), and it was a very intentional name. He was supposedly born into a scholarly family, but he really liked martial arts, so he abandoned his culture for the military. But Chu Mo was already accustomed to calling him one-armed uncle. Sui Hongjun had also gotten used to the name.

[TL: Sui Hongjun’s name means great scholar.]

Sui Hongjun warmly smiled at Chu Mo: “Say whatever you have to say young master.”

The Fan household never had young maids before, or any of those old maidservants. It could be said that Chu Mo was raised by one-armed uncle, so the two were extremely close!

Otherwise, how could Chu Mo easily let another person manage several hundred thousand gold liang? He held the same trust in one-armed uncle as his own grandfather. Chu Mo considered one-armed uncle as family, even though there was no blood relation.

Therefore, Chu Mo came to a decision after thinking some things through. Since he can't carry them to the highest heavens, then why shouldn't he help them fly more freely in their skies?"

From the Immortal Sky, to the grasslands, and all the way to Yellow Flame City.....Chu Mo wanted to completely remove himself from sect influence that came from on high. There was only one way for this, and that was to be stronger than them!

Hiding.....was an escape.

"One armed uncle, it's like this. You know my master can manufacture high grade pills. Xia Jing's ailment was cured by my master." Chu Mo clearly understood after talking with his master. Relying on his own strength was not enough to hold back torrential storms. It was much better to push situations, especially ones that could easily lead him to death, onto a formless, traceless mysterious master.

Sui Hongru nodded. He looked at the empty right arm, and

bitterly smiled: “I know this. But, young master, is there such a medicine that could make my arm grow again?”

Chu Mo bitterly smiled: “This kind of medicine might be possible in the Immortal World, but it can’t be conceived in ours.”

Sui Hongru laughed loudly. He already let the matter go a long time ago. People can’t live in the past, so shouldn’t they look forward? Besides, he lived quite well now. He was even happier than his days in the military.

No matter what, people can only realize their own value, and find something worth living for.

“There isn’t a way for your arm to regrow, but there is a way to make you increase realms, all the way to the golden stone realm!” Chu Mo simply said. Then he watched one-armed uncle’s reaction.

“Ha ha, of course I’ve heard that before. There is legendary medicine in the world.....” Sui Hongru was speaking, but then he suddenly stared with big eyes. A smile started to spread across his face, and he looked not quite convinced at Chu Mo: “Young master, you.....what are you trying to say?”

Chu Mo took out a pill bottle, and handed it to Sui Hongru. He smiled and said: “This is the last batch of this kind of medicine. Making more won’t be that easy. I think you can be an expert with just a left arm when you reach the golden stone realm.”

Sui Hongru subconsciously received the pill bottle, then he foolishly stared at Chu Mo. The corners of his mouth sharply pulled up into a smile. His lips slightly moved as if wanting to say something, but nothing came out in the end.

“It isn’t easy to find a martial skill that let’s you use your left arm to the fullest, but don’t worry uncle.” Chu Mo seriously spoke: “Once there is a chance, I will certainly find you a martial skill suited for the left arm!”

“Young.....young master?”

“Yes?”

“Inside this bottle, is it really.....godly medicine able to promote me to the golden stone realm?”

“What godly medicine? It’s merely medicine combined from pieces of refined bone, congealed blood, and transformed metals. That’s it.” Chu Mo simply said.

Sui Hongru held the medicine bottle like it was a baby, then looked at Chu Mo like he was a freak: “How can you say it so simply? Don’t you know Da Xia has only a few golden stone experts? Don’t you know that this medicine bottle can’t be bought with millions of golden liang!”

As he spoke, an expression of struggle appeared on Sui Hongru’s face. Then he said: “Young master.....I can’t have this bottle!”

“Why?” Chu Mo looked confused.

“Your grandfather still hasn’t taken one.” Sui Hongru softly said: “Your grandfather needs it more than myself.”

Chu Mo said: “I have arranged something else for my grandfather. This is for you. So long as you don’t despise using it uncle, losing the potential to rise.”

“How can that be?” Sui Hongru gazed with big eyes at Chu Mo: “Despise using it? Is there someone the world that despises these things?”

“Well, after using this medicine, you cannot enter the intent refinement phase.” Chu Mo said.

“My young master.....is this really the way you think? Without even mentioning the secular world, how many people in the large sects dare say they will enter the intent refinement phase?” Sui Hongru looked in disbelief at Chu Mo: “You think too much!”

Chu Mo wryly smiled. In fact, he already thought things through.

Chu Mo started to have extremely busy days after this period of time.....

Chapter 120: Hidden Kings

Chu Mo was busy discussing with Xu Fufu how to manage the organization he established, opening up the other branches of Gluttonous Ogre with Liu Mei'er, and following up with Xia Jing on the medicine that needed refining. He also had to guard against a retaliation from the Vermilion Bird Association, which could come at any time.

His organization's true manager was Miao Yiniang. She already took a pill, and her body's strength was quickly making breakthroughs, increasing by a large amount practically every day.

Miao Yiniang stayed hidden in the basement of that separate house. She was waiting to break into the golden stone realm and stabilize, and then she would come out. Chu Yan also stayed by Miao Yiniang's side the whole time. Her rate of progress was even faster than Miao Yiniang's.

Chu Mo only secretly came out a few times within the following month, and he was careful not to be seen each time.

Liu Mei'er worked with great passion at Gluttonous Ogre. This educated and clever girl finally found her life's greatest joy. Because of this, she completed whatever project Chu Mo suggested in the shortest amount of time.

Chu Mo really admired this woman's level of talent. As a result, Gluttonous Ogre opened up branches in the Qing province as well as some other large cities.

Xia Jing continued gathering ingredients on his end. He even placed his sights on all of Da Xia!

The drug prices of the entire country practically doubled during this period of time. Many drug suppliers were extremely happy, but the large drug store owners started to cry bitter tears.

They were happy at first, because they sold several drug ingredients that were stored up over the years. They wanted to sell everything, and it was a lot of money. But slowly.....they discovered there weren't enough drug ingredients left to use! When it came time to buy again from the suppliers.....they discovered too late. The prices had already risen to an unbuyable level!

Either.....don't buy, or pay the higher price!

The suppliers can easily go to the Prince Mansion for the same price.

.....

And now Xia Jing had another crime against the people.....

monopolizing the drug ingredients!

This was just another drop in the ocean as far as Xia Jing was concerned. Another bad name didn't have any effect. He ate and drank merrily, because this was a joyous occasion. His spirit had never been better.

These things weren't too big a problem for Chu Mo. There was a person to manage almost everything, so he didn't need to worry about much.

There was only one thing he really needed to worry about, the Vermilion Bird Association!

Chu Mo used the intelligence organization, as well as a few other channels, to learn more about the Vermilion Bird Association in this short period of time. He found out several pieces of shocking information.

Especially today while in the Prince Mansion, he came to know one piece of information which caused his heart to sink.

"Vermilion Bird Association? How are you entangled with them little Chu?" Xia Jing seemed very astonished when he heard those three words.

"I don't have a dispute with them. I only heard they are a very large power. I'm just asking." Chu Mo casually spoke.

“You musn’t provoke them, and stay as far away as possible.” Xia Jing wrinkled his brow and spoke in a low voice: “In our world, the top level sects rule high above the masses. Royal authority only controls the secular world. The Vermilion Bird Association, Azure Dragon Court, Black Tortoise Palace, and the White Tiger Temple make up four of the six biggest powers on the four continents. They are the spokesmen for the top grade sects in the secular world! Their organizations are extremely complicated!”

Xia Jing recollected: “I once met the court ruler for the Azure Dragon Court many years ago. He was an Immortal Sky elder! Their rank system is extremely strict. There isn’t much difference between their ranks and the secular world regimes. The court ruler is the diamond rank. Below are the gold rank elders, silver rank deacons, bronze rank stewards, and finally black iron rank at the lowest.”

Chu Mo asked while somewhat confused: “The top large sects can already rule over everything themselves. Why do they need to establish such a power?”

Xia Jing bitterly laughed: “The large sects have too many rules, and claim to be righteous. They have a clean and pure name, not dirtying the secular world..... Several years ago, the top large sects supported the royal powers in exchange for a large amount of resources. The royal powers of the secular world aren’t pushovers, and aren’t that easy to pinch. Besides, the secular world power only gives them a limited amount of benefit.”

Xia Jing sighed: “Human greed, is it only in the secular world? Those old sect elders actually have the largest appetites! When

they aren't satisfied with the resources that the royal powers provide.....the Azure Dragon Court, Vermilion Bird Association, Black Tortoise Palace, and White Tiger Temple appear. Of course, the people that appear never admit membership to the organizations.

“So these powers were actually set up by the large sects.....” Chu Mo finally understood why Hua Nan and Sun Yifei were so arrogant that day. They basically lacked any fear. Such large powers were actually supporting behind them.

“It's not merely the large sects. Some of the middle and smaller sects need resources as well. They don't even have a way to obtain benefits from the secular world royalty, so they entered into the four organizations one by one. They use the organizations to obtain a large amount of resources and expand themselves.” Xia Jing sighed: “If the royalty is the ruler of the secular world, then the four organizations are the secret kings! Several of the large businesses actually contain the organizations' members.”

“Yes ah, the royal families have no way to root them out if they are supported by the sects.” Chu Mo said.

“Root them out? Ha ha, it's good if they simply don't revolt. First, they don't care about the secular world power. Second, the two sides have come to a tacit understanding.” Xia Jing somewhat tiredly spoke: “Mutual non-interference.”

“So you're saying that the Azure Dragon Court holds the same power within the Azure Dragon's continent as the royal families hold within the secular world?” Chu Mo asked.

Xia Jing nodded: “It could be understood that way.”

“Then, if people from the Vermilion Bird Association came over and acted recklessly with the Azure Dragon continent, then would the Azure Dragon Court become involved?” Chu Mo asked.

Xia Jing raised his head and took a long look at Chu Mo. This crafty old prince already guessed a long time ago, Chu Mo was certainly involved in some conflict with the Vermilion Bird Association.

He seriously warned Chu Mo: “The Vermilion Bird Association members would most certainly be stepping out of bounds, but the Azure Dragon Court may not necessarily act recklessly within the Vermilion Bird continent. There is a silent agreement between the two.”

Chu Mo nodded, showing he understood. Chu Mo took his leave from the Prince Mansion soon after. His thoughts were somewhat heavy on the road home.

Xia Jing’s words were a clear warning to Chu Mo. The Azure Dragon Court will likely turn a blind eye if the Vermilion Bird Association attacks Chu Mo in Yellow Flame City.

“Could it be.....I can only wait until my enemy seeks revenge?” Chu Mo slightly closed his eyes and mumbled: “My current power is still very weak. I’m still not strong enough to fight with these huge monsters. Waiting for death to knock on my door is clearly

unwise, so I need to think of a way to settle this once and for all.”

Chu Mo suddenly thought of Wang Dafa.

That rich and powerful person who acted like an upstart. The one who casually sent Chu Mo a bronze cauldron worth three hundred silver liang.

“I should go pay him a visit.” Chu Mo’s eyes twinkled as he thought.

Chapter 121: Azure Dragon Court Elder

An hour later, Chu Mo was changed into his appearance from auction house, and swaggering into the most prosperous area of Yellow Flame City

The people that lived here were the richest of Yellow Flame City, and even the richest of Da Xia!

[Wang Dafa](#)'s mansion was here, and it spread over a wide area. The square footage was actually no less than the Prince Mansion.

The name was also quite interesting. It was two antique style words, King Mansion!

[TL: Wang is a common name in Chinese, and it means king, so he actually named the mansion after his surname. Wang Dafa's name literally translates to something like King Big Moneymaker.]

Chu Mo couldn't help but smile when he saw the two words. He thought this high-profile businessman was indeed clever.

Normally giving a mansion this name would not only invite criticism, but it would also stir up some trouble. However, Wang Dafa's King Mansion had already existed for several decades, and he never had any trouble. Just this point alone can showcase the power of Wang Dafa.

Chu Mo was unsurprisingly stopped by the guards. He was quite tall after changing appearances, and held a dignified appearance,

making people not underestimate him. The guards very politely asked who Chu Mo was seeking.

“Please report to your master. Tell mister Wang that a friend from before has come to pay a visit.” Chu Mo politely said.

“Mister Wang?” The gate guard’s mouth subconsciously twitched. This was probably the first time he heard his master called Mister Wang. However, Chu Mo saying the words friend made the guard act politely. He made Chu Mo wait a little bit while he passed the news inside.

“Ha ha ha ha.....”

Chu Mo could hear the hearty laughter of Wang Dafa after a short period of time. It came from the courtyard, before the man even appeared.

“My good old little brother, you really are good ah, unexpectedly visiting your big brother after a month. You should know, your big brother has been waiting several days for you at home!” A plump dark-tanned man with thick eyebrows and big eyes walked outside, and he warmly welcomed Chu Mo.

He had an expression of complete familiarity upon seeing Chu Mo, and he enthusiastically started to talk: “My little brother, you look a lot like me, simply handsome! Ha ha, come quick come quick. I just gave orders to the cook. He’s quickly preparing good wine and dishes. I wish to drink several cups with my brother!”

He brought Chu Mo straight into the King Mansion drawing room as he spoke.

Wang Dafa sent everyone else away after they entered the drawing room. He then stood for a moment and gazed out the window before finally turning around. He looked at Chu Mo and lightly said: “Little brother, did you encounter any danger that day?”

Chu Mo was slightly stunned. Part of the reason he came today was to seek information, but the greater reason was to thank Wang Dafa and become friends. He never thought Wang Dafa would give him such a pleasant surprise upon first meeting.

In a sense, they were strangers deep in conversation, but Chu Mo didn't feel the slightest bit awkward!

It was actually very pleasant!

Chu Mo looked up at Wang Dafa and said: “How does older brother know?”

Wang Dafa sighed: “Brother, I felt regret after I gave you the bronze cauldron.”

Chu Mo was slightly stunned while looking at Wang Dafa

Wang Dafa said: “Don't misunderstand. I don't care about the silver. Several thousand silver liang is nothing to me. I can casually

give several thousand silver liang to people I like.”

“Yes brother?” Chu Mo looked at Wang Dafa.

Wang Dafa sighed: “I didn’t pay much attention to the bronze cauldron that day. Who cares that it came from the Vermilion Bird continent. I wouldn’t even care if it came from the Black Tortoise or White Tiger continent. But I later discovered that thing came from the once glorious Misty Palace!”

Wang Dafa held a bitter expression: “I felt regret at that time. Although we are complete strangers, I still look favorably upon you, and don’t wish you harm! Several Vermilion Bird continent sects combined to tear down the Misty Palace back in the day. It was said that twelve disciples from the Misty Palace escaped, and those twelve disciples all carry terrifying treasures.”

Wang Dafa sighed: “The most important is the heritage that was split up amongst the twelve disciples! Each one received a portion. Whoever finds all twelve can control the complete Misty Palace heritage.”

Chu Mo said to Wang Dafa: “How does older brother know this?”

Wang Dafa looked at Chu Mo: “Don’t you know as well little brother?”

“I know something.....I was pursued for no good reason, and almost lost my life.” Chu Mo said with a sigh.

Wang Dafa smiled and said: “All right, I heard that two people planned to use a Misty Palace treasure to draw out a disciple. One had their arm cut off and was badly injured. The other disappeared without a trace. I never imagined, I inadvertently made friends with such an amazing little brother.”

Chu Mo looked into Wang Dafa’s pair of shrewd eyes, and he couldn’t help but wryly smile.

Who said this guy was an upstart hillbilly? Come out, I swear that I won’t beat you to death!

Where was the crude upstart? Clearly he was a clever businessman!

Furthermore, his knowledge ranges from the sects down to the regular world. He was an unimaginable businessman!

“Yes ah, I really did do that. They followed me after I left.....” Chu Mo shook his head and bitterly spoke: “However, I never heard the three words Vermilion Bird Association before this. And I’ve certainly never heard about the Misty Palace!”

“Is Miao Yiniang still doing well?” Wang Dafa suddenly asked.

Chu Mo’s pupils flickered at Wang Dafa.

Wang Dafa laughed and said: “I’m not very close to Miao Yiniang, but we are acquainted. Her reaction that day was a dead giveaway! Even outsiders could see, not to mention the person staring at her the whole time. She had a special sentiment for the bronze cauldron. Such a clever person, how could she in the crucial moment.....women!”

Wang Dafa sighed and said: “Don’t think too much little brother. The reason I know all this is purely accidental. You see, I.....am an Azure Dragon Court Elder! I have a gold rank status in the Azure Dragon Court! So knowing this kind of information is normal.”

“What? You are an Azure Dragon Court Elder?” Chu Mo was honestly quite surprised.

Chu Mo guessed that Wang Dafa likely belonged to a large power, but Chu Mo never thought he was an Azure Dragon Court Elder.

Wang Dafa laughed: “Looks like my little brother has been doing his homework over the past several days. The Azure Dragon Court entrusted me to buy several Red Dragon Ice Python pieces on that day of the auction. I happened to see the bronze cauldron, and I really did intend to bring it back. However, you called me Mister, and I was touched, so I gave it to you. Ordinarily the matter would stop here.”

Wang Dafa said to Chu Mo: “My little brother you’ve come for a visit, so your big brother will treat you well, and regard you as a good friend! But who could have thought the bronze cauldron was bait from those Vermilion Bird Association sons of bitches! And they suspect Miao Yiniang is one of the twelve disciples from the

Misty Palace. I combined all the pieces of information, and I feel that I likely endangered you. I can finally relax after seeing you today. Your old brother won't ask who you really are. Let us have plenty to drink! But after these drinks, let us no longer be related."

Chapter 122: Dilemma

Chu Mo slightly squinted while looking at Wang Dafa. He laughed and walked over: “Older brother, in my eyes, we don’t need to drink the wine. We are just acquaintances. Older brother gave me a bronze cauldron, so I had to show thanks as a younger brother.”

Chu Mo pulled out a porcelain bottle from his robes as he spoke: “I see older brother doesn’t have any illnesses, but you work too hard every day, and often have a splitting headache. When it happens, I’m afraid it gets quite bad. The heat and swelling can be difficult to bear, so you must drip ice water on the forehead, and finally relieve swelling.”

A cold trace of light suddenly flashed within Wang Dafa’s pupils, vanishing away the smile. He looked Chu Mo up and down: “You investigated me?”

Chu Mo laughed and waved his hand: “I mean no harm old brother. What’s the harm in investigating? You don’t need to worry. You spoke so much just now, but there is one thing you didn’t say.”

Chu Mo laughed and said: “Ha ha, older brother could find out Miao Yiniang’s identity from the bronze cauldron. Don’t tell me you haven’t guessed who I am? Seeing how quickly you wish to part ways, I’m afraid my identity is the reason right?”

Wang Dafa stared at Chu Mo, and his eyes gradually revealed a

trace of admiration. He finally sat down and bitterly said: “I never thought a teenager could easily disguise as a man in his twenties. And not the slightest flaw is showing. You’re right, I inferred! However, I would have never taken the initiative and ask if you didn’t admit first. There are some things I really don’t wish to mix with. I really am an Azure Dragon Court Elder, but I am also a businessman.”

“You know who I am older brother, so you know how amazing my medicine is right?” Chu Mo sighed to himself. His relation with Miao Yiniang wasn’t exactly public, but it appeared to be investigatable in the end.

One could see the importance of intelligence information just from this alone. The Azure Dragon Court.....was a huge monster in the Azure Dragon continent. When it came to intelligence gathering, they were an unparalleled force!

The organization that Chu Mo and Xu Fufu establish was extremely weak in comparison.

But Chu Mo wasn’t worried. He had patience!

One day his power would mature.

Chu Mo calmly admitted his identity to Wang Dafa because he had other plans!

Chu Mo viewed this Azure Dragon gold rank elder as someone he

could work with!

Wang Dafa nodded and looked at Chu Mo: “Little brother’s ability to refine medicine has already spread around the circles. Right now no one is seeking you to refine medicine because a few things aren’t quite clear. But soon, probably very soon, people will be seeking little brother’s house, and come asking for medicine.”

“That depends on my master’s mood, and their sincerity.” Chu Mo plainly said.

A tiny ray of light flickered in Wang Dafa’s eyes, and his heart shivered. The master that can produce such a disciple in six months, how could he come from an easy generation? This was precisely the reason Wang Dafa wished to distance himself.

Wang Dafa was an Azure Dragon Court gold rank elder, and had a vast amount of intelligence at his fingertips.

The Vermilion Bird Association constantly searched within Yellow Flame City for one of the twelve Misty Palace disciples. Wang Dafa already caught wind of this a long time ago.

He also knew the Vermilion Bird Association had their sights on Miao Yiniang for a long time.

However, Wang Dafa never thought the bronze cauldron was bait from the Vermilion Bird Association. He was extremely angered when he came home and found out the truth.

Because he accidentally got involved!

The Vermilion Bird Association members naturally knew his status, so they couldn't run over and bring trouble to Wang Dafa. However, Wang Dafa still felt unpleasant.

Wang Dafa thought to himself: 'A person easily called me mister, and I easily favored him. How can you seek trouble with me Vermilion Bird Association?'

So Wang Dafa immediately started to investigate the matter. He didn't know before investigating, but with one look, he was chilled to the bone!

Because he suddenly discovered the youth next to Miao Yiniang. All the evidence he gathered pointed to one person!

It was Chu Mo! The one causing a stir in Yellow Flame City!

This youth provoked catastrophe only half a year ago. He offended prince Xia Jing, and was madly pursued. He fled Yellow Flame City and vanished. He appeared once again after six months, but with the attitude of a king. First he mightily smashed Xia Jing's Prince Mansion, and then Xia Jing welcomed him inside, like not a goddamn thing happened.

Then came the news of Xia Jing recklessly buying all the drug ingredients.....

All this information combined led to an astonishing conclusion. After half a year, this youth named Chu Mo possessed ability beyond imagination.

According to a man like Wang Dafa, there was only one person who could make Chu Mo possess this much ability. That was a hermit!

Yes, not a sect, but a hermit!

The sects could never raise this kind of disciple. Even if Chu Mo was a world ending talent, he could never enter a sect, and then leave his master half a year later. The more talented a disciple, the more they had to stay with master, and receive all kinds of training. The most crucial point of training.....was to build sect loyalty!

How much loyalty would he have to the sect after leaving half a year later?

Not to mention, the top sects aren't lacking in talent at all. Chu Mo could never squeeze out everyone else's resources as soon as he entered the sect, no matter how talented he was. If he acted that way, then he wouldn't last a month!

So, there could only be the hermit. Only a hermit could raise such a disciple, then release him into the world to gain experience after such a short period of time.

So-called hermits possess tremendous power, but they don't belong to any sect!

There weren't many of these people in the four continents, but Wang Dafa knew of at least ten!

Practically every hermit was an unprovokable existence.

First of all, they had nearly unmatched military strength. Every hermit possessed terrifying power beyond what a normal person could imagine. In fact, practically all the hermits were alone in the world, without any cares.

This kind of person.....was the most terrifying!

Because not only were they powerful, but they don't care about anything!

Provoking a hermit was really the same as seeking death.

Because of this, Wang Dafa immediately broke into a cold sweat after deducing the youth at the auction house was Chu Mo in disguise.

He was an Azure Dragon Court gold rank elder, holding a high position. However, he would still hold an outside elder status if he resided in a sect. This made Wang Dafa understand even more so

than others.

Hermits cannot be provoked!

Hermit disciples.....naturally can't be provoked either!

Now it was clear. The Vermilion Bird Association members wanted to capture Miao Yiniang. Chu Mo certainly wouldn't turn a blind eye as Miao Yiniang's best friend in Yellow Flame City.

Later on, an intense conflict would likely occur!

This would happen sooner or later in Wang Dafa's opinion.

The Vermilion Bird Association members certainly didn't know the youth was Chu Mo. Wang Dafa wasn't looking down upon them. Not even the royalty had better intelligence collection than him in Yellow Flame City!

Wang Dafa didn't wish to enter the whirlpool, and he certainly didn't wish to provoke a hermit!

Only now this guy didn't leave him any way out. With no room to negotiate, Chu Mo placed everything that should and shouldn't be said onto the table.

‘Why are you telling so much to an outsider like me?’

This was Wang Dafa's dilemma.

Chapter 123: One Promise

If going by just the Azure Dragon Court elder status, Wang Dafa really wanted to completely cut himself away from Chu Mo's affairs. The Azure Dragon Court didn't wish to get involved, and each person would go their separate ways. However, he couldn't act this way when looking at the situation as a businessman. Other people might look down upon an ordinary General's grandson, but Wang Dafa knew the ins and outs of Chu Mo's background, and he didn't dare look down upon Chu Mo.

And now there was one more reason to not become enemies with Chu Mo, pills!

Wang Dafa's headache flared up once or twice a month, and he felt as if he wanted to die each time. Wang Dafa even thought to end his own life several times!

No one knew the feeling of that kind of migraine, and apart from himself.....no one knew of its existence. Even the way Wang Dafa acted like a rich upstart over the past several years, it wasn't merely to conceal his true identity. But even more so.....his actions were a way to relieve the stress!

He was relieving the type of pain that warped his spirit!

He was afraid that he would die sooner if he lived life like a normal person.

It actually didn't matter whether or not the youth with terrifying

medical skill saw Wang Dafa's illness at a glance, or if the youth's mysterious and powerful master secretly watched him, thereby discovering his illness.

The most important thing was this. Xia Jing's incurable illness was already beginning to recover!

This was what tempted Wang Dafa the most.

Wang Dafa looked at Chu Mo, and his eyes filled with an extremely complicated glow.

Chu Mo calmly watched Wang Dafa. The emotion in his eyes was extremely clear, cold, and raw, like the water flowing from an Autumn mountain spring. The bottom could easily be seen with one glance, but men didn't dare lightly step in.

Wang Dafa smacked his head and suddenly laughed: "My chef, he came from the royal kitchen. He has several specialty dishes that received the emperor's praise. Little brother, do you really not want a taste?"

Chu Mo also laughed at this time, and nodded: "Good!"

The two ate the meal happily.

Wang Dafa appeared to have mulled things over. He put aside his so-called reservations, and the two chatted like old friends. Wang Dafa even explained several things about the Azure Dragon Court

to Chu Mo. Perhaps intentionally or unintentionally, he also spoke about the Vermilion Bird Association.

Chu Mo also intentionally and unintentionally gave away some information about his master, as well as the small mountain that he cultivated on.

People really needed experiences to mature. No one was naturally cunning, and no one was born a hypocrite.

The fourteen year old youth really wanted to always be able to maintain a child's innocence. He really wanted to continue being passionate, but this was impossible.

Because this world does not belong to anyone.

Even the Demon Lord was so powerful that he was without equal in the world, but didn't he still abide by this world's rules? Otherwise, he would directly take all the drug ingredients from the Immortal Sky and the other large sects.

If they didn't give the drug ingredients up, then he could extinguish them all!

Wouldn't it be much easier?

Ultimately, everyone was human, and not demons!

Even if everything was calculated, even if there was selfishness, there was still humanity in the end.

The Demon Lord never spoke with Chu Mo about the Spirit and Immortal World cultivation methods, but Chu Mo had a feeling. Maintaining a degree of purity was a very important thing!

Wang Dafa could hold his alcohol. He had several cups with Chu Mo, but he appeared pretty much sober. He was only a little intoxicated.

Chu Mo was young and hot-blooded. His physique was also a much higher quality than the majority of people in the world, so he could also drink quite a bit. There was practically no major effect.

The two drank and ate their fill soon after. Chu Mo gave a bottle of Medicine to Wang Dafa before he departed: “Older brother, take a pill every three days if you trust me. There are ten pills in total. So after one month, your headaches will be healed.”

Chu Mo repeatedly researched his jade’s ability to refine methods over this short period of time. In the end, he discovered it to be the work of that large green stone. It is able to absorb a large amount of drug ingredients, and because of this, he only needed to meditate on the medicine’s application while in the jade space. Then the majority of medicine would quickly appear.

Take Wang Dafa’s ailment for instance. This was practically no problem for Chu Mo.

Wang Dafa looked at the pill bottle before him, and his eyes flashed with a complicated color. He raised his head and said to Chu Mo: “Does little brother trusts me just like that?”

“I should say, older brother just needs to trust me.” Chu Mo somewhat shyly laughed: “These ten pills are a complete cure. Taking one less than the full amount won’t have any effect on your illness. So.....if you don’t trust me, then test one out, ha ha.....”

Chu Mo didn’t continue on speaking, but Wang Dafa spoke a little angrily: “Who does little brother take me for? Would I do such a thing? Other people couldn’t buy little brother’s medicine for ten thousand [jin](#). How could I be suspicious?” Yet he secretly cursed: ‘Little bastard, why are you laughing so shy? Don’t you know that you are striking an adult’s face? You actually see right through my thoughts. It’s completely shameless!’

[TL: One jin = 10 liang. Wang Dafa doesn’t specify gold or silver jin.]

It’s hard to say which one was truly shameless. Wang Dafa already thought to find a few doctors that he knew quite well. He would have them research the medicine, and find out if Chu Mo wished to harm him. In the inner depths of his heart, he still didn’t completely trust Chu Mo.

As a result, Chu Mo’s words placed him into another corner. At the same time, he also somewhat lamented: ‘Is this really a fourteen year old?’

“I’m just being cautious. You will clearly see results after taking one pill older brother.” Chu Mo said: “I am always this good to friends.”

Wang Dafa deeply sucked in a breath, and then he said: “Good, since little brother has already spoken to here, then I will give you a promise! Yellow Flame City.....and even all of Da Xia is not the territory of the Vermilion Bird Association! The Azure Dragon Court won’t turn a blind eye if they become too excessive.”

At this point in time, Wang Dafa’s aura of an Azure Dragon Court Elder finally released.

The words of great men hold enormous weight, and they must keep their promises. Ordinarily, people only destroyed these kinds of promises when absolutely necessary. This was even more so for those in higher positions.

Chu Mo faced Wang Dafa and bowed: “Older brother is righteous! I must thank you in advance!”

Wang Dafa waved his hand, and said in a low voice: “The Azure Dragon Court can demand them to not be too excessive, but a few secret methods are unable to avoid.”

Chu Mo thought of Miao Yiniang and Chu Yan’s current realms. He laughed and said: “This is no harm. The Azure Dragon Court would never send out an Understanding Intent realm expert right?”

Wang Dafa shook his head in shock: “Not possible. Do you think Understanding Intent experts are that easy to call out?”

Chu Mo smiled and shook his head: “That’s good! Older brother, I must depart!

Chu Mo was very happy. The trip to visit Wang Dafa far exceeded his expectations. But he reckoned Wang Dafa.....was not nearly as happy.

Chapter 124: Not The Same Pill

Wang Dafa watched the figure of Chu Mo depart. He couldn't help but deeply ponder, and finally mumbled after a long time: "What did the boy's last words mean? Don't tell me, he can deal with anyone below the understanding intent realm? How is that possible? Maybe if the emperor acted, but would the royal family even intervene here?"

Wang Dafa uncertainly shook his head. His eyes filled with confusion, and he couldn't help but curse soon after: "You little thing. If you really are so powerful, then why do you need my help? Maybe later I should recruit you into the Azure Dragon Court!"

Wang Dafa muttered, wagged his head, and returned to his room. He looked at the pill bottle on the table, and his eyes flickered with light: "This boy, he actually is quite lovable."

.....

Chu Mo felt that no one was watching him after leaving the King Mansion. He moved straight through a small alley towards that separate house.

He already hadn't seen Miao Yiniang and Chu Yan for several days. He didn't know what the two girls' realms had reached. According to the effects of the pills, Chu Mo estimated Miao Yiniang and Chu Yan already entered the golden stone realm.

The ingredients for these pills were quite expensive. Chu Mo might not even have enough money if relying solely on his own wealth. Especially one of the ingredients, it already entered into the category of top grade Yuan medicines. He was able to successfully refine ten pills because of this top grade Yuan medicine. However, no matter how miraculous the large green stone was, it could not produce the pills out of thin air.

Therefore, Chu Mo trusted the two girls very much.

Chu Mo arrived at the separate household after seven or eight turns, and quietly slipped inside. He found the mechanism and entered into the cellar

The two girls heard the activity, and they both took precautions. They finally relaxed a breath after seeing Chu Mo.

Chu Mo didn't even have to use the jade to inspect them when he entered. The temperaments of the two girls were clearly not the same.

Especially Chu Yan, she was already a stunning girl originally, but she always felt inferior in the core of her bones because of her environment growing up. Outsiders may not necessarily see this feeling, but those close to Chu Yan could clearly sense her lack of confidence.

But over the past month, the lack of self-confidence quickly soared away. Now Chu Yan appeared extremely happy, and her face brimmed with a self-confident smile.

At the same time, her temperament became extremely noble!

It resided and stirred in the body, but several things weren't exactly natural. Her self-confidence and temperament seemed to be not innately acquired.

Miao Yiniang's change wasn't as obvious at first sight. She had a charming and enchanting figure, and she honestly grew up to be extremely pretty. It was to the extent that when people first saw Miao Yiniang, they wouldn't notice her other changes. Her face was enough to make people's eyes linger for a long time.

But Chu Mo still felt the change in Miao Yiniang. There was also an extreme degree of self-confidence!

The two women both carried joyful expressions when they saw Chu Mo: "Noble son!"

"Young master!"

The two yelled in unison, then started giggling.

Chu Mo looked at the two: "How is it?"

Miao Yiniang spread her two arms wide. She turned her enchanting body in a circle, and the skirt of her garment danced in the air. She looked at Chu Mo: "See for yourself."

“Beautiful!” Chu Mo praised.

“Who said you could look at that?” Miao Yiniang gave a haughty look, then angrily said: “I was telling you to look at what changed!”

“Even more beautiful!” Chu Mo spoke with his inner feelings.

“Not proper!” Miao Yiniang was secretly happy inside, yet she couldn’t help but speak with cute angry eyes: “Isn’t little sister Chu Yan even more beautiful?”

“Yes, also beautiful.” Chu Mo smiled.

Chu Yan bashfully lowered her head, and her two cheeks were glowing. She then raised her head and looked at Chu Mo: “Noble son, I already entered the golden stone realm! Sister Miao Yiniang and I both entered into this realm. Big sister Yiniang said that noble son’s pills are even more amazing than the legends!

“Ah?” Chu Mo was a little shocked. He didn’t know anything about the legendary pills that could make a person enter the golden stone state, so he didn’t know the miraculous nature of the pills he grabbed out. He somewhat uncertainly stared at Miao Yiniang.

Miao Yiniang nodded and said: “Right, the Misty Palace once had a pill refining master, and he could refine the pills that step into the golden stone realm. He raised several golden stone realm disciples, and they became the backbone power of the sect,

carrying out all kinds of missions.”

Chu Mo nodded, and felt that this was something large sects probably did. He also thought the disciples were certainly happy to have an opportunity to scale the heavens in one step.

“However, those people didn’t have stable realms after taking the pills. It was very likely for their realms to fall after stepping into the golden stone realm. The most serious would fall all the way back down to the fourth rank iron bone realm!” Miao Yiniang said: “The Misty Palace was a first-rate sect of the Vermilion Bird continent back then. If four or five people could succeed out of ten, then that already would be considered good. This rate of success also made the the other sects incredibly envious.”

Chu Mo’s eyes flashed. He looked at Miao Yiniang, and slightly wrinkled his brow: “Big sister, before you took those pills.....you knew there wasn’t a hundred percent chance of success? Why didn’t you tell me?”

Miao Yiniang smiled: “Wasn’t it successful?”

“.....” Chu Mo didn’t know what in the world was going on.

Miao Yiniang softly said: “My young master, you mustn’t feel responsible. You must clearly know the value of this medicine! The people of this world would wildly chase after it if there was just a one in ten chance of success.”

Miao Yiniang's pair of beautiful eyes fell upon Chu Mo as she spoke: "It's a pity that the ingredients to manufacture these pills are too costly and rare. Not even the sects could have a large amount of golden stone realm experts. They basically couldn't afford the cost. But your pills, at least so far.....have a hundred percent success rate!"

Chu Yan said from the side: "Yes ah yes ah, noble son, you may not realize it. I can clearly feel my realm is stable. Moreover.....there might be a chance to make another breakthrough!"

"Right, I first believed that I was mistaken." Miao Yiniang glowed at Chu Mo: "But sister Chu Yan actually has the same feeling! This explains the problem!"

Chu Yan said: "Noble son is the world's most powerful medicine master! No.....immortal pill master!"

"You all mean.....in the future, you won't be stuck at the golden stone realm?" Chu Mo was a little shocked. He looked at the two: "But these pills, they can't actually replace a person's maturation process!"

"Normally speaking, these pills don't even guarantee success." Miao Yiniang said.

"Perhaps, you are both the lucky four or five out of ten?" Chu Mo said.

Miao Yiniang slightly shook her head: “Even though I’m not sure what exactly happened, and I’ve never actually seen a legendary pill that can directly increase a person to the golden stone realm, but I have a feeling. The pills you refined young master, compared with those.....they aren’t the same!”

Chu Yan also vigorously nodded. She also didn’t know much about the legendary golden stone pills, but it didn’t stop the outstandingly gorgeous girl from reaching a blind level of worship for Chu Mo.

At this time, an enormous noise suddenly came from the door leading to the cellar.

It made the three people inside completely stunned.

Chapter 125: Wrath Of Battle

Soon after, someone suddenly blasted open that thick and heavy iron door, and advanced towards the people below like a meteor.

Miao Yiniang brushed aside the incredibly thick and heavy iron door like it was nothing. It instantly stopped in mid-air, and miraculously stayed suspended there! Miao Yiniang's face showed an ice-cold murderous intent. Her slender hand softly turned over, and her palm faced outward. She pushed.....

The heavy iron door suspended in mid-air suddenly flew backwards at an unimaginable angle!

And the speed it flew far exceed the speed in which it came!

Boom!

A figure was jumping down from above right at that moment, and was struck by the iron door that was flying backwards. They didn't even have time to yell, and got instantly sent flying backwards!

“Ah!” A scream came from outside.

Soon after, frenzied voices followed like the sound of flying chickens and leaping dogs.

“Hua Nan, Hua Nan wake up. What happened to you? Don’t scare me!” A woman’s tearful voice followed after.

Chu Mo and the others all heard the voice’s owner. It was the person who fled that day, Sun Yifei!

Pa!

A crisp noise echoed.

The sound of a slap made its way down to the three below.

“Bitch! Didn’t you say the strongest was an iron blood realm cultivator? Is this the counterattack of an iron blood realm cultivator?” A hoarse angry voice responded.

The sound of Sun Yifei weeping passed down.

Miao Yiniang looked at Chu Mo and said: “Young master, don’t act today. Give me and little sister Yan a chance to practice!”

Miao Yiniang said to Chu Yan: “Big sister, the time for revenge has come!”

Chu Yan’s eyebrows raised: “We’ve already waited long enough!”

The two girls’ figures flashed, instantly disappearing from the

cellar.

Boom!

Rumble!

Enormously loud noises immediately came from outside.

Chu Mo followed closely behind, and thought: ‘This group of people was going to come sooner or later, but they have come at just this moment. Don’t tell me Wang Dafa sold me out?’

However, Chu Mo gave up on that idea soon after, because Wang Dafa couldn’t have sold him out this fast.

It seemed like the Azure Dragon Court wasn’t like he assumed before, just letting the Vermilion Bird Association run freely in Yellow Flame City. Wang Dafa gave Chu Mo a promise today. It was straight-forward, and not with conditions. The Azure Dragon Court really didn’t like the Vermilion Bird Association acting recklessly in Yellow Flame City.

It was like fishing territories. Outsiders weren’t welcome.

Chu Mo shot out like an arrow as he was thinking, yet he saw the courtyard was already caught up in a fierce battle.

The two women had both broken into the golden stone realm.

They both had a full body of power with no place to vent, and now seeing their enemies, their eyes turned red. This was especially the case for Miao Yiniang. She seemed to recognize one of the enemies, and upon seeing him, she beelined towards him and wildly attacked.

Chu Yan faced another person, but this person's realm was clearly no equal to Chu Yan. He was likely a rank five iron blood realm cultivator.

And he was firmly suppressed by Chu Yan!

If Chu Yan's combat experience wasn't so scarce, he probably would have been finished within three moves.

The person Miao Yiniang faced was a sixty year old cultivator, and seemed to be the one that smacked Sun Yifei. His eyes were full of both rage and horror, and he dealt with Miao Yiniang's unreasonable and crazy attack while cursing at Sun Yifei: "You bitch, I should have killed you back then! The Misty Palace remnants cannot remain! You will die today!"

Sun Yifei just foolishly held onto the one-armed and already perished Hua Nan. She didn't say a word, like she was completely lost.

Miao Yiniang gnashed her teeth, and attacked the man even more fiercely. Although she hated Sun Yifei to the extreme for selling her out, they were still Misty Palace sisters in the end. It seemed as if the many years of suppressed anger and rage leaked

out.

This old man had reached the golden stone realm as well, and was practically an unequaled existence in the secular world.

He was also a gold rank elder in the Vermilion Bird Association. He always looked at the highest peak, and didn't place anyone in his eyes. The only reason he came out this time was for the Misty Palace heritage that Miao Yiniang carried.

After all, this would be a huge contribution, and given that he is a gold rank elder, he cannot escape convention.

Yet the elder never thought that this relaxed easy mission would lead to a deadly situation. With one step.....he landed right into the frying pan.

Especially that beautiful woman, she actually recognized him..... he was indeed one of the men who besieged Misty Palace. As a result, he tried to escape from the frenzied attack, but that almost impossible.

“Wild woman! Don't force me to kill you!” The old man roared, and he started to unfold counterattacks at the same time.

He was many more years matured, and relied on cultivating step by step to the golden stone realm. Miao Yiniang could barely be his match once he becomes serious.

But Miao Yiniang already attacked wildly!

She completely adopted a life or death posture.

The old man hadn't yet lived enough. Although he was furiously counterattacking, after a short time, he still had no way to defeat Miao Yiniang.

On the other side, Chu Yan was taught many ways to assassinate by Yuan Zidai. The princess also once used her status to put Chu Yan on death row, and forced Chu Yan to kill a prisoner. Chu Yan never dared tell Chu Mo about this, afraid that he would dislike her. But deep on the inside, Chu Yan wasn't a good girl who was afraid to kill!

Because of this, the current battle between Miao Yiniang and the old cultivator reached a deadlock. At the time the other two were evenly matched, Chu Yan was gnashing her teeth. She swept her blade with extreme deft, making the opponent's weapon shake.

Then her figure soared up into the air like a fairy. Soon after, she pierced towards the fifth rank iron blood cultivator from on high.

The weapon in the iron blood realm cultivator's hand started to tremble at this moment, and both arms went numb, creating a wide opening. Faced with Chu Yan's blade, he had absolutely no possibility of dodging.

His pupils enlarged, and he let out a dreadful cry: "Ah!"

Pu!

Chu Yan's blade pierced right into the throat of the iron blood realm cultivator.

The blade pierced through, and Chu Yan quickly left, not even stopping to see Chu Mo's expression. She directly rushed towards the old cultivator, and tenderly yelled: "Big sister, I've come to help you!"

Boom!

A golden stone realm aura exploded out.

The old man originally thought to withdraw, and now seeing this young, unreasonable, and excessively beautiful maiden unexpectedly release a golden stone realm aura, he was immediately taken aback.

"How is this possible?" The old cultivator exclaimed in disbelief.

Don't tell me golden stone realm cultivators are everywhere nowadays?

Now he completely lacked any intention to fight, and he turned tail and ran.

Miao Yiniang gnashed her teeth, fundamentally not willing to let him go, and she thrust a blade towards his shoulder.

Chu Yan also pierced towards the man's brow from another direction.

Furthermore, this blade wasn't only incredibly crafty, but also steady as a mountain!

It wasn't a move that a teenage maiden would use!

Chu Yan's heart was already completely calm. She was prepared to fully admit her past to noble son after this battle.

But at the present moment, she only wanted to chop this old cultivator!

She hadn't spent many days with Miao Yiniang, but their affection was extremely good. The two were close like sisters. She had an extremely good understanding towards Miao Yiniang. Chu Yan knew that Miao Yiniang would never go this crazy, not unless she held a grudge towards the old man.

"Die!" The old couldn't run. His run was unexpectedly interrupted by a pincer attack, creating an incredibly difficult situation.

Right when he roared, his golden stone realm power reached the extreme. He faced Miao Yiniang's attack, despite everything, and

avoided Chu Yan's blade. Then he struck with a palm towards Chu Yan's front!

“Little slut.....go die!”

Chapter 126: Killing Golden Stone

It didn't need to be said, this old cultivator was extremely powerful, and he had abundant combat experience. Facing two opponents at the same realm, under a clear disadvantage, he was still able to put out this level of counterattack.

Pu!

Miao Yiniang's blade pierced the old man's shoulder without any hesitation, causing blood to spurt.

The old cultivator merely grunted. The flesh of a golden stone realm cultivator was extremely powerful, and revealed its greatest strong point at this time.

The blade injured the old cultivator's shoulder, but even with Miao Yiniang's golden stone realm power, it had a tough time piercing in when it struck the shoulder blade.

A golden stone realm's flesh was like stone, and skeleton was like gold!

Meanwhile, the old man's thunderous palm already struck towards Chu Yan's front.

This palm was like a mountain pressing down!

An irresistible force!

Although he suffered under the effects of the shoulder injury, this palm still came with formidable force that was enough to crush stone.

Killing a person.....would naturally be no problem.

Partly because of the pain, and partly because of the fury, the old man's expression became extremely grim and twisted.

It was extremely terrifying!

That murderous aura.....was overwhelming!

Chu Yan thought to avoid at this time, but it was already a little late!

She experienced all kinds of training since childhood, but she really didn't have much true combat experience. Especially facing this unimaginable golden stone realm cultivator, causing a huge deficit in the end.

Chu Yan's thoughts were somewhat sad within the flash of light: 'I'm sorry noble son. I won't be able to be honest with you about the men I assassinated.'

At this point in time, a figure suddenly appeared in front of Chu Yan. It was like a large mountain completely blocking the little Chu Yan.

Bang!

Crack!

A muffled bang echoed.

The large mountain shook, yet still stood there!

Chu Yan watched Chu Mo's body shake before her, then she yelped. There was a bone cracking sound, but her front was still blocked!

That figure was incredibly tall.

Tears began to flow down Chu Yan's face. This figure was eternally engraved into her heart. It would never change in this life.

Pu!

Chu Mo sprayed out a mouthful of blood. He was pale, and he said to old man who looked stunned: "This is a golden stone cultivator's power? How strong!"

The opponents palm not only made Chu Mo's organs suffer heavy damage, but it also made Chu Mo's incredibly solid arm fracture on the spot!

If it wasn't for the full body of tempered bones, the opponents palm with such an enormous gap in power.....it wouldn't have just fractured the arm.

The arm might not have remained on Chu Mo's shoulder!

Therefore, the old man was completely shocked.

He was completely awed!

His entire being was stupefied!

The old man's eyes filled with disbelief, and he foolishly looked at the youth ahead. His mouth slightly opened: "Are you a monster? How can you block my palm?"

Miao Yiniang saw Chu Mo block the palm in place of Chu Yan, and suffer heavy injuries. She then went completely insane!

The old man stared distracted, but the wild Miao Yiniang didn't hesitate in the slightest.

The blade stuck into the old man's shoulder couldn't pierce

through his solid golden stone realm bones.

But soon after.....she sent another blade chopping at the old man's neck!

And at this time, it was right when Chu Mo blocked the definite killing blow, but still didn't die.....the instant the old man was still staring blankly.

Qiang!

The blade in Miao Yiniang's hand screeched like a dragon's cry.

The old man slightly came back to his senses at this time. His pupils instantly filled with a terrified light.

His lips slightly opened, as if wanting to say something.

However.

It was too late!

A resplendent blade light shone behind the old man.

It dazzled the eyes!

Even if it was golden stone realm flesh, it couldn't stop the full

powered indignant blade from a cultivator at the same realm.

Crack!

The old man's head went flying. Powerful spurts of blood surged out of the empty cavity like a blood-colored fountain, shooting high up into the sky. It directly sprayed into the sky above, and gave off an incredibly magnificent feeling!

The old man's body still stood there, reluctant to fall. After a good moment, it finally plopped to the ground.

Chu Mo swayed towards Miao Yiniang and smiled: "Big sister..... you are still amazing!"

Chu Mo's body went weak as he spoke, and had to be supported by Chu Yan. Her face was stained in tears since she felt responsible, and she said to Chu Mo: "Noble son, I'm sorry. It's all my fault. I was no good!"

Chu Mo somewhat feebly smiled: "You both call me noble son, how could I not protect you?"

Miao Yiniang rushed to Chu Mo's side. She looked at him with deep concern: "Are you okay? Are there any problems?"

Chu Mo said with a little difficulty: "No problem. I just suffered a small internal injury. You should first go over and check on your senior sister disciple....."

Miao Yiniang stubbornly shook her head like a little girl. Her eyes became red and full of mist. She reached out, gently caressed Chu Mo's pale face, and then mumbled: "What do I need to check on her for? She is how she is. In my heart, ten thousand of her aren't worth one of you young master."

"Such an adult shouldn't be so childish." Chu Mo weakly said: "She is our enemy.....quickly go!"

Miao Yiniang finally came to her senses. She turned, and then glanced at Sun Yifei. Sun Yifei was still holding on to the corpse of Hua Nan. A trace of disdain flashed across Miao Yiniang's face: "She.....already can't be considered our enemy."

Sun Yifei, who was continuously holding the corpse of Hua Nan, suddenly looked up at this moment. Her pair of originally beautiful eyes didn't have the slightest bit of spirit left inside. She looked at Miao Yiniang, looked at the seriously injured Chu Mo, and then said with an envious tone: "Miao Yiniang, your luck is much greater than mine."

Miao Yiniang looked up. Her beautiful oval face was full of pride: "Of course!"

"Ha ha....." Sun Yifei gently smiled all of the sudden. Her lonesome face actually became somewhat playful: "You haven't changed. You appeared a little rude and unreasonable in this short time, but inside your bones.....there is still softness as before. Moreover, you still have a proud and kind heart."

Miao Yiniang blankly stopped. Even if she extremely hated the elder sister that betrayed her, these words from Sun Yifei almost made her shed tears. Only a sister that grew up with her in the same sect could understand her this well.

Who doesn't learn to conceal after growing up? Who writes their sentiments on the face?

Sun Yifei said in a light tone: "Cherish that time without worry or anxiety. The greatest annoyance at that time was when we could finally grow up. Ha ha, that time was so innocent. Who could know the agony after growing up?"

Sun Yifei looked up as she spoke, faced Miao Yiniang, and lightly said: "Little sister disciple, I'm sorry."

Tears formed in the corner of Miao Yiniang's eyes. A complicated color flashed across her face. She hesitated a moment, and then said: "Let it be. You betrayed the master's sect, and sold me out. However, I killed your beloved. You should probably hate me more."

Sun Yifei shook her head, tenderly looked at Hua Nan in her embrace, and said: "Without the cause, would this result have occurred? I don't have the qualifications to hate you. Still, thank you. Little sister disciple, you let me obtain freedom."——

Chapter 127: Destiny Shapes Us

“Yes?” Miao Yiniang was immediately startled.

Chu Yan and Chu Mo also stared blankly.

Chu Mo pulled out a pill at this time, swallowed it, and quietly began to exercise his cultivation. He then somewhat strangely looked at Sun Yifei. Because at this moment, Su Yifei seemed to change into a completely different person.

“Why would I enter the Vermilion Bird Association? Why would I walk together with my enemies?” Sun Yifei Mumbled: “Sorry, I deceived you before. Actually, there are several people in the Vermilion Bird Association that betrayed us in the past. But you questioned me intensely..... for the sake of my honor, I could only lie to you. Because I don’t wish.....I really don’t wish.....to be a traitor to the sect, and an evil person that sells out my sisters. Even if.....that is the truth.”

Tears flowed down Sun Yifei’s face and dripped below. She took a deep breath: “Although I am sorry to the sect and to you, I do not dare ask for forgiveness. However, I wish to say that this wasn’t my original intent.”

A grieved light flashed in Miao Yiniang’s beautiful eyes. She looked at Sun Yifei, but didn’t speak.

Sun Yifei gave a self-depreciating smile, ignoring the tears flowing down her face: “I know that no matter what I say now, I

cannot make up for my mistakes. But.....I still think, you need to know the truth. I don't wish.....I really don't wish for the truth to be buried under the hypocrisy of this world. I want to let you know."

Miao Yiniang still didn't speak, and only silently watched Sun Yifei.

"They say the teleport spell used on us twelve by the senior generation, it was one left behind by an immortal. We could only use it, but not grasp the true meaning. Because of this, none of us knew where we were headed. That feeling of waiting for destiny's choice, little sister, you know it the best." Sun Yifei said.

Miao Yiniang silently nodded.

Sun Yifei softly said: "My whole heart believed back then, that I would be completely removed from the Vermilion Bird continent, far away from that dangerous place. Therefore, when I came out of the teleportation spell, I was in a hurry to figure out where I was."

Miao Yiniang thought about herself back then, then softly said: "I was the same."

"But you were luckier than me!" Sun Yifei expressed this sentiment once again. She looked at Miao Yiniang: "You came to the Azure Dragon continent, and you met good people. But as for me.....I couldn't depart the Vermilion Bird continent, and was merely transported to a place thousands of miles away. That's where I met Hua Nan."

As she spoke, Sun Yifei looked at the already stiff one-armed man in her embrace: “He was extremely good to me, practically obedient. I discovered later on that he guessed my identity the first time we met. His sect elders also participated in the siege on Misty Palace, but at that time, he didn’t have the qualifications to participate in the battle.”

Sun Yifei smiled. Her gentle and soft vision fell upon Hua Nan’s face: “He guessed my identity, but he never asked. He never mentioned the words Misty Palace. That was the happiest moment in my life. Only it’s a pity.....it didn’t last long.”

Sun Yifei’s pupils revealed an extremely terrified color. She recollected as she spoke: “The senior generation of his sect quickly returned. They were the ones that participated in destroying Misty Palace. The matter of twelve disciples escaping the destruction was completely revealed. The entire Vermilion Bird continent offered an insane reward. I could feel Hua Nan’s heart grow heavy at that time. It struggled and turned in knots.”

Sun Yifei laughed: “You know my temperament. Misty Palace disciples aren’t that timid. I liked Hua Nan, and didn’t want to make things difficult for him. I had to choose between sect loyalty, and honesty to the one I loved. I chose the latter in the end. I told him that I was one of the twelve disciples. I told him to hand me over!”

Miao Yiniang sighed: “He didn’t agree right?”

“Of course. If he agreed at that time, how could this have happened. He probably wouldn’t have died.” Sun Yifei’s expression became extremely mournful. She said: “He smiled at that time, and said he already knew a long time ago. But he liked me, so he pretended not to know. I asked him what to do now? He said we should elope!”

Sun Yifei bitterly smiled: “The world looked very big. We thought there would be a place for us to seek shelter, but there was nothing! We didn’t flee for long before his sect elders started to spread a search. One of his friends sold him out. Fortunately, he has a powerful father in the sect that holds a high status. He found us before the hunters.....”

Miao Yiniang looked at Sun Yifei, then she softly sighed: “His father brought you into the Vermilion Bird Association?”

Sun Yifei nodded: “Yes ah, only the Vermilion Bird Association could protect us at that time. Because the Vermilion Bird Association was a huge monster to that sect, they didn’t have the qualifications or power to contend. I had no choice at that time. It was either death, or join with them, and enter the Vermilion Bird Association.”

Sun Yifei looked at Miao Yiniang: “I didn’t want to die, so.....I could only compromise. However, the Vermilion Bird Association wasn’t that easy to enter. Even though I was willing to hand over my piece of the heritage, I still had to see if the leaders wished to take me. After all, the Vermilion Bird Association has several of our sect’s enemies.”

Miao Yiniang nodded: “Yes ah, if they took you in, there are those who would be restless.”

“Right, Hua Nan’s father pulled all his strings at that time, practically drawing on all the social relationships gathered up over the years. He exhausted every option. That’s how we finally entered the Vermilion Bird Association.” Sun Yifei softly sighed: “At that time, I already.....thoroughly fell into enemy territory! The man I loved acted recklessly for me. How could I not be moved? Therefore, even if I had to lay down my life for him, I wouldn’t hesitate.”

Sun Yifei said so much in one breath, it seemed as if her whole being was burdened. She held the man in her arms. The insides of her lifeless pupils still yet held the slightest bit of spirit: “Hua Nan Should have promoted to a silver rank deacon a long time ago due to his strength, but there were some hidden Vermilion Bird Association members in his old sect that objected, so he was never promoted. This time we would have gotten your heritage, and the business of Gluttonous Ogre. The two of us could have finally promoted to silver rank deacons.....I’m sorry, little sister, please forgive my selfishness. I already know that I’m not fit to call you sister. But please don’t argue with a person who is about to die, okay?

“There’s no need.....” Miao Yiniang looked at Sun Yifei. She finally sighed a breath: “I never said you must die. Go. The Black Tortoise continent and White Tiger continent are both good. In short, leave this place. The farther away the better. All of the grudges later on, they won’t have anything to do with you.”

Sun Yifei looked stunned at Miao Yiniang for a long time. Then she looked at the reactionless Chu Yan and Chu Mo. She finally shook her head, bitterly smiled, and softly said: “I spoke the truth, you are still that proud and kind little girl. Your greatest fortune is that your life is good. Because of your fate, you are able to stick to your original heart. Not like me.....I’m not that lucky.”

“Hua Nan loved me madly, but he.....didn’t heavily value my opinion. He was very stubborn. In fact, we had a chance to completely hide away over the past couple of years. It’s a pity.....forget it, let’s not talk about this. I have one last thing to remind all of you. You all killed a Vermilion Bird Association gold rank elder. They certainly won’t take this lying down. The Azure Dragon Court is here, so the Vermilion Bird Association may or may not be too excessive, but they will think of every possible way to assassinate all of you. Also, be careful of Hua Nan’s father. If he knew his son died here, he would certainly go insane.”

Sun Yifei grabbed a ring as she spoke. She tossed it to Miao Yiniang, then said in a gentle voice: “This is my portion of the heritage. The one I gave away back then.....was a copy! I was able to secretly change some of the parts. Ha ha, they still haven’t found out after all these years. This was the sole time that I didn’t let the masters down. Good disciple sister, I ask one last thing of you. Bury us together.....thank you!”

“Don’t die elder sister.....” Miao Yiniang took the ring. She couldn’t hold back the tears, and blurted out a cry to her senior sister disciple.

“Good little sister, I’m sorry! It’s my fault. This is the

punishment I deserve! Hua Nan.....wait for me. I'm coming to find you!" Sun Yifei's eyes suddenly became large. Soon after, blood began to flow out her mouth. She was already at her last breath, and her body went limp.....collapsing onto Hua Nan's corpse.

"Elder sister....." Tears blurred up Miao Yiniang's eyes. A thousand feelings bubbled up in her heart. It was truly complicated, and hard to say whether it was love or hate. Still, her heart was extremely pained. Miao Yiniang broke down into tears, crying like a little child.

Chu Mo and Chu Yan were both completely silent.

Chapter 128: Misty Palace Royal Academy

“People are born in suffering. What fear is there in death? Miss Sun, rest in peace. Hua Nan, although I cut off your arm, and you died at my sister’s hand, but that was you bringing trouble on yourself. All things only have one final result. The hate is gone in death. I hope you can find escape in another world.”

Chu Mo stood and spoke before a new grave.

Miao Yiniang stood with red eyes next to Chu Mo. She softly said: “Elder sister, although I don’t approve of your choice, I understand. If the one I love died, I certainly couldn’t live alone. I want to tell you, since you didn’t sell off the true Misty Palace heritage, then, you didn’t betray the elders. You sold me out, but I’ve already forgiven you. Rest in peace.”

The event was already three days ago. Miao Yiniang and Chu Mo buried Hua Nan on a mountain nine miles outside of Yellow Flame City. It faced a large surging river, creating a nice fengshui.

The Vermilion Bird Association ate a huge loss this time. A gold rank elder was actually sacrificed in the secular world. This kind of news would probably rattle the Vermilion Bird Association upper layers.

However, the Azure Dragon Court’s reaction was quick. Wang Dafa was truly a man of his world. After the events were revealed, the Azure Dragon Court directly reacted the next day. They found the remaining Vermilion Bird Association Members in Yellow

Flame City, gave them a scolding, made them carry a letter, and then scam out of Yellow Flame City.

This was the news that Wang Dafa secretly gave Chu Mo. Chu Mo already did some investigation of his own, and saw Wang Dafa wasn't cheating him.

The Vermilion Bird Association members in Yellow Flame City really did vanish without a trace.

However, Chu Mo and Miao Yiniang both knew quite well, after suffering such a large loss, the Vermilion Bird Association certainly wouldn't leave the matter be. They were only lying low in wait. Their revenge would certainly come sooner or later.

“Chu Mo looked to Miao Yiniang, and simply said: “Sister, I have an idea.”

“Yes?” Miao Yiniang's eyes focused on Chu Mo.

“Chu Mo said: “Right now, your identity is most likely no longer a secret in the Vermilion Bird Association.”

“Yes ah. Since they sent a gold rank elder, this couldn't be unknown to the higher level members.” Miao Yiniang sighed: “Apart from completely disappearing from Yellow Flame City right now, there is no way my identity will stay hidden for long.”

“They sent four people this time, and they have all died.

Therefore, they temporarily don't know that you and Chu Yan broke into the golden stone realm." Chu Mo's pupils flickered, and he whispered: "First let them suspect. On my end, I will create an identity for them!"

"An identity?" Miao Yiniang's elegant eyebrows knitted together, and she looked confused at Chu Mo.

Chu Mo nodded: "If you have a royal or military identity, and add on the Azure Dragon Court's suppression, then the Vermilion Bird Association will have to carefully think about causing you trouble. Regardless of overtly or covertly, there needs to be discretion."

"Miao Yiniang somewhat hesitantly said: "How could a royal or military status be that easy? Isn't it impossible?"

"Chu Mo said: "You need to look at yourself big sister."

"Look at myself?" Miao Yiniang looked baffled at Chu Mo. She very quietly said: "Young master, do you mean that I've become a grown woman?"

Chu Mo's mouth twitched: "What are you thinking? How could I suggest that kind of thing?"

"That is?" Miao Yiniang winked at Chu Mo.

Chu Mo said: "Big sister already has two pieces of the Misty Palace heritage. Wouldn't you say that this much is already enough

to establish a small sect?”

Miao Yiniang nodded, then said: “Right, this heritage contains a myriad of things. There are all sorts of exercises. There is more than enough to establish a small sect. Even if there is just one piece of the heritage, that would be enough to establish a small sect.”

Chu Mo laughed: “We should use the royal family title, and establish a small sect.”

“Ah? Within the secular world?”

“Right, inside the secular world! Who said sects must be established deep in the mountains or in an old forest?”

“We would rely on the royal family?”

“We won’t rely on them. We are just spreading a name. At that time we will borrow the title.”

“Is that okay? The royal family isn’t stupid?”

“Of course the royal family isn’t stupid. The talented people that our small sect produces can work together with the royal family! We don’t need to use any of their resources. We only need to borrow their title. This type of transaction comes without any loss to the royal family!” Chu Mo smiled at Miao Yiniang: “Moreover, our small sect will be named the Misty Palace!”

“This this this.....this would be okay?” Miao Yiniang somewhat hesitantly spoke, but her eyes clearly showed that she was moved.

As a Misty Palace disciple, her lifetime’s greatest ambition was to openly restore the sect.

Miao Yiniang never even thought about opening up a sect in the secular world, especially clear and out in the open.

And now at Chu Mo’s suggestion, her first response was: “Isn’t this too crazy?”

After all, she never heard of a sect establishing itself in the secular world. Sects were high high above, and looked down on the masses below. In the common person’s impression, all of the sects, no matter the size, should be hidden away in the great mountains and rivers that ordinary people cannot approach.

But after thinking it over, Miao Yiniang felt that Chu Mo’s words were quite logical.

“Yes ah.....no one has ever made a rule. Sects don’t have to be established in the deepest mountains, oldest forests, or places completely removed from the world. The Misty Palace is already no more. It was thoroughly extinguished! To establish the Misty Palace at this time, there must be a surprise move.” Miao Yiniang mumbled. She felt the Chu Mo’s suggestion was more and more feasible.

Chu Mo smiled and said: “Once this news spreads, there will certainly be a tempest. There will likely be extremely polarized views that emerge.”

Miao Yiniang looked at Chu Mo, and her eyes filled with adoration.

Chu Mo said: “Those sects will certainly mock us openly, and they will madly criticize. They will say that we’ve lowered the status of sects in the eyes of the people! But the people of the secular world who’ve had no way to approach sects, they will certainly be excited!”

Miao Yiniang silently nodded: “That is certain, but I think I can endure the pressure from sects.”

Chu Mo laughed and shook his head: “This isn’t a problem that we can let persist, so we must think of another method. Why does everyone chose muscle when thinking of a solution?”

Miao Yiniang speechlessly looked at Chu Mo. She thought: ‘Didn’t you suggest building the small sect?’

Chu Mo said: “We can add a title to the small sect name. For instance, we can call it Da Xia’s Misty Palace Royal Academy!”

Miao Yiniang sluggishly looked at Chu Mo.

Chu Mo said with an indifferent expression: “We will publicize it as a newly established sect! Having top grade exercises and scriptures, and two masters that can move unhindered through the secular world! He he.....also all kinds of resources.....can be exchanged for contributions! When it’s done like this, we certainly won’t lack in disciples. What do you think? With the two pronged approach of sect and royal family, do you think no one would come?”

Chu Mo looked at Miao Yiniang: “At that time, your status would be the president of Da Xia’s Misty Palace Royal Academy! Actually, you will be like the Misty Palace founder! The Vermilion Bird Association has enough gall to cover the heavens, and wouldn’t place a secular world royal family in their eyes. However, the Vermilion Bird continent sons of bitches may not have the courage to run wild within the Azure Dragon continent!”

Chapter 129: You Will Be President

“I understand what you mean. We’ll borrow the royal family title to establish a sect that belongs to us. Then, we will recruit disciples from the secular world, and train up our force. Correct?” Miao Yiniang looked at Chu Mo. Her pupils flickered, and she softly said: “It seems a little crazy at first glance, and a little unimaginable. But after carefully thinking it over, if the royal family agrees, then the plan could really succeed.”

“Unless you have anything else to add, I will go take care of the royal family side!” Chu Mo said.

Miao Yiniang sighed: “What opinions could I have? If it’s possible, then I must do it! Only as it is, won’t there be some bad effects towards you? After all, when we set up our organization, didn’t everything have to be done in secret, yet now.....”

Chu Mo smiled and shook his head: “Those are two different things, completely different. How could it have any effect on me? If I had to guess, I would assume that I must report to the military front lines soon. So, I want these things to be completely taken care of before I leave.”

Miao Yiniang’s vision became extremely gentle, and focused on Chu Mo for a long time. She quietly said at last: “What elder sister Yifei said was right. I really am much luckier than her.”

The two left this place soon after. Miao Yiniang returned to Gluttonous Ogre, and Chu Mo went straight towards the emperor’s

palace.

After passing through the guards, the emperor didn't avoid meeting, and he actually made the guards bring Chu Mo straight into the royal study.

This kind of treatment was seriously considered extremely favored.

The emperor didn't make Chu Mo wait too long, and he quickly arrived in the study, making Chu Mo feel welcomed upon first seeing him.

"How is your arm? Your complexion doesn't look too well. Did you go through some disaster recently?"

Chu Mo laughed: "It's nothing. I had a scuffle and was carelessly injured. I'll be better in a few days."

"If only it was nothing." The emperor spoke, sat down, and then asked Chu Mo: "Why have you sought me?"

"It's like this....." Chu Mo chose his words, and told the emperor about his idea.

The emperor didn't refuse in the first moment, but rather wrinkled his brow, and quietly sat there.

Chu Mo didn't rush. He calmly stood there, and waited for the emperor's answer.

After a long time, the emperor looked up, and asked Chu Mo: "You said Miao Yiniang was a disciple of the top grade Misty Palace sect from the Vermilion Bird continent?"

Chu Mo nodded: "Yes."

"Back then, several powers united from the Vermilion Bird continent, and they completely wiped out the Misty Palace. Twelve of the disciples were able to flee. Each one carried a heritage, and they went into exile....." The emperor wrinkled his brow. He reached out and softly knocked on the table in front of himself, then mumbled: "In other words, doesn't she have countless enemies?"

"Right." Chu Mo openly looked at the emperor: "Her enemies are all in the Vermilion Bird continent."

"I know." The emperor looked at Chu Mo: "I'm thinking..... there are several advantages and disadvantages here. Young boy, you have given me a difficult problem!"

Chu Mo chuckled, and said: "Emperor, it looks like the royal family will have to bear the burden of protecting Miao Yiniang, but in reality, the royal family doesn't have to really pay anything."

"How do you say?" The emperor looked at Chu Mo.

“This is actually a good thing for the royal family and even all of Dia Xia.” Chu Mo didn’t explain anything, but looked at the emperor and said: “I don’t need to speak about the benefits, I believe your majesty already knows them quite well. The Vermilion Bird Association.....is an organization from the Vermilion Bird continent, but I’m guessing your majesty is uncomfortable with them stretching their hand to our Azure Dragon continent, and even ignoring the royal authority of the secular world. Isn’t that right?”

The emperor looked at Chu Mo, and plainly said: “Uncomfortable.....but what can be done?”

Chu Mo smiled: “Don’t tell me emperor, you wish these kinds of events.....to continue into the future?”

The emperor coldly snorted, yet didn’t say anything.

Chu Mo said: “The sects have always been high above, and never placed the secular world people in their eyes. Even several of the sect members don’t place royal authority in their eyes. This situation, needs to change sooner or later!”

A trace of flight flashed across the emperor’s pupils, and he stared at Chu Mo.

Chu Mo’s voice was slightly cold: “These people in the sects, after all is said and done, they aren’t immortals! They need all kinds of resources just the same. They need to eat, drink, sleep, and piss.

But yet they place their status even higher. On what basis do they have to be so arrogant?”

Chu Mo said with cold clear eyes: “Isn’t it because these sects have far greater power than the secular world? They control the high level scriptures and exercises that the secular world can rarely touch. They control all kinds of pill prescriptions.....and prohibit these things from entering the secular world at all costs. Even if a prince studies in the sect, he can’t pass anything on to others!”

The emperor nodded, then said: “Right, do you have a way to crack this?”

Chu Mo said: “Miao Yiniang carries one sixth of the Misty Palace heritage! This heritage includes high level scriptures and exercises. There are also all kinds of pill prescriptions. With these things, there will absolutely be outstanding disciples once a sect is established!”

The emperor looked at Chu Mo: “What about if a spy comes to steal?”

Chu Mo laughed: “These things can’t be completely avoided. Whoever wants to steal, will study like the rest. We don’t have all the methods of the large sects after all. However, we can’t do nothing out of fear. Also, won’t there be selection when it comes to passing on exercises? Would we casually teach the best exercises to anyone who comes along? First, you need to look at the innate gifts. Second, they must go through all kinds of tests.”

The emperor nodded: “According to what you say, this.....seems doable.”

“Of course it’s doable!” Chu Mo smiled: “We have this world’s top grade scriptures and exercises. We also have the determination and capability to establish a sect. The most important thing is, our sect will sit right in the secular world. When it comes to recruiting disciples.....it will be several times easier than even the large sects!”

The emperor sucked in a deep breath. He pushed both hands on the table, slowly stood up, and said to Chu Mo: “Later on, the most talented of these disciples.....they will certainly help the royal family. Am I right?”

Chu Mo nodded: “Since we are borrowing the royal family’s light, and receiving their protection, then it is only natural to pay something back in return.”

“No, not just return payments. What I want.....is for this sect to be completely controlled by the royal family! You, can you do that?” The emperor gazed with a cauterizing light at Chu Mo.

He was like an ever dormant beast finally revealing its teeth.

The sect would certainly turn into a terrifying power if it truly matured. Moreover, it would have much more influence in the secular world than the other sects.

As far as a country ruler goes, nothing could make them rest easier than controlling such a formidable force.

In addition, any power that rested in another's hand was a huge threat to the emperor!

Like a sword suspended above the emperor's head, it could come chopping down at any moment.

How could they sleep easy?

Normally speaking, an emperor would automatically refuse upon hearing Chu Mo's suggestion. That would be the common response. However, he didn't act that way. The emperor saw the huge benefits!

Wordly royal authority was high up in the eyes of the people. It was sacred and not to be violated. But royal authority was immediately cut short when faced against the top large sects. Who would keep the status quo if it could be changed?

Chu Mo looked at the emperor, slightly smiled, and said: "How about your majesty becomes the academy dean? Later on, the successive rulers of Da Xia will all be Misty Palace Royal Academy deans! The first thing each student that enters will receive is a Da Xia royal family education. What do you feel about this?"

Chapter 130: The Strong Use Force To Break The Rules

“Dean? Isn’t that a little strange?” With the emperor’s wisdom and foresight, he could naturally understand Chu Mo’s meaning in an instant.

The royal family wanted to control the power, but they weren’t suited to personally send someone and manage the academy. If they send the crown prince or second prince, then Chu Mo would certainly disapprove immediately, and he would never agree.

Like that, if successive rulers could all hold the title of dean for a real sect power.....at least in name only, then the power would belong to the royal family.

With practically all the disciples of the academy being children of Da Xia, if the royal family still can’t hold control.....then it could only be said their ability was too weak, and no one else could be blamed.

If an academy can’t be controlled, then how could they rule a large country?

The emperor paced back and forth through the study, seeming to be in deep thought. Soon after, he went over to Chu Mo’s side and said: “Then.....what angle will you play here?”

Chu Mo smiled and said: “I am your majesty’s subject. I will

immediately report to the military. This matter will have nothing to do with me.”

“No, no good.” The emperor’s brow wrinkled as he spoke: “You spoke about Miao Yiniang, but I don’t trust her. You must be involved!”

“Ah?” Chu Mo couldn’t help but be stunned, and grimaced at the emperor: “I am just a child.....you want me to be involved?”

The emperor stared for a moment Chu Mo: “You have the nerve to say you’re a child? Which family has a child like you?”

Chu Mo scratched his head and spoke: “What about me?”

“Whoever takes you for a child is a fool!” The emperor could hardly maintain his ruler’s dignity and aura. This youth was really too evil.

The emperor wasn’t without doubt about those events on the grasslands. He wondered if those truly amazing events were actually done by Chu Mo. If Chu Mo truly was an imposter, then Da Xia would lose a lot of face.

As a result, when the investigation went deeper, the royal family’s intelligence network found out even more astonishing news.

Chu Mo didn’t have many achievements on the grasslands, but

each one cut like a precise knife into the most fatal spot.

The course of events with Elder Hao Yue were even more legendary.

Elder Hao Yue was at his most dominant position at that time, and was actually successfully flipped over by Chu Mo.....after the emperor heard this course of events, he could only be speechless. He sighed because Chu Mo's luck was really too strong!

One of the key figures now held quite the reputation on the grasslands. He was practically without equal, a giant running like a river through the Wang Court's military. It was reported that after those events, he became Chu Mo's close follower!

After hearing the intelligence personnel's description of the giant, the emperor became extremely covetous. A practically impenetrable giant like that could push back an army with thousands of horses. If he came to Da Xia and joined the military, then he would certainly be an unequaled valiant military leader.

Now princess Nuo Yi practically controlled the state of affairs in the grasslands. And it's reported that in her room, there hangs a painting.

The intelligence personnel of Da Xia exhausted up a large amount of energy and resources. They were finally able to find an abandoned outline of the painting, and it now hung in the emperor's study.

The person in the painting was clearly Chu Mo!

The emperor naturally couldn't tell Chu Mo these things. But in the depths of his heart, he liked this young evil talent to the extreme.

The emperor already thought it through, so long as this youth doesn't commit an atrocious act like treason, [a king by a different name](#).....will sooner or later be Chu Mo!

[TL: A king by a different name is a reference from the [spring and autumn period](#) in China. The ruling Zhou dynasty had to rely on 'kings' to rule over territories in a feudal system. Many of these 'kings' were related to the Zhou family, but some were outside the family line, hence the 'king by a different name.']

And apart from an era of developing kingdoms, thinking to make a king by a different name.....was simply beyond imagination!

Chu Mo looked at the emperor: “Your majesty.....what is your answer?”

The emperor gathered up a smiling expression, seriously looked at Chu Mo, and said: “I trust you.”

Chu Mo nodded.

The emperor continued: “I also trust myself.”

Chu Mo nodded once again

The emperor deeply looked at Chu Mo: “But if the crown prince succeeds the throne.....”

Chu Mo understood the emperor’s intention, and he had no choice but to say: “If the crown prince doesn’t take the initiative to trouble me, I certainly won’t take the initiative against him.”

“What if he comes seeking you trouble?” The emperor asked.

Chu Mo thought a moment, then said: “Your majesty, once the Misty Palace Royal Academy is founded, it belongs to all of Da Xia.”

The emperor was stunned. According to him, Da Xia was the royal family, and the royal family represented Da Xia!

But other people’s interpretation might not be the same!

Da Xia was a Da Xia of countless citizens!

“Therefore?” The emperor looked at Chu Mo.

“Therefore, the dean is simply the academy’s spiritual leader. I can guarantee the emperor this, the academy will never do anything to disservice Da Xia.” Chu Mo said.

The eyes of the emperor flickered. He looked at Chu Mo, was silent for a long time, and then sighed: “Don’t tell me, is there no possibility of reconciliation between you and the crown prince? As far as I’m aware, there is no true profound hatred between you two.”

Chu Mo gave a helpless smile: “Your majesty doesn’t need to tell me this.”

The emperor nodded: “I.....understand! I will live for many more decades, so there will be no more problems. Therefore, the relationship between you and the crown prince still has time to repair. You say this is good, then I approve.”

Chu Mo bowed down: “This boy.....gives many thanks to his majesty!”

The possessor of a Hero’s Medal doesn’t need to bow down to the ruler. This was the respect that the royal family gave to the greatest heroes of Da Xia.

“And also.....” The emperor looked at Chu Mo: “This academy, yes, sect, you must hold an important position inside it. Let me think a moment. What position suits you.....sect.....sect.....there is always someone inside the sect who protects the laws. Yes, you will be the Misty Palace enforcer!”

Chu Mo’s mouth twitched. To tell the truth, he had a complete lack of interest in authority, but he understood the emperor’s intent. By comparison with Miao Yiniang, the emperor certainly

trusted Chu Mo more.

Moreover, because Chu Mo was yoked to his grandfather, the emperor believed he had a greater control.

Chu Mo clearly understood the reasoning, so he didn't refuse the emperor's arrangement. This not only made the emperor rest at ease, but Miao Yiniang could rest at ease also.

Chu Mo took a deep long breath after leaving the royal palace. Anyway, this matter could be considered done.

As far as the grudge with the crown prince, he believed there was a way to settle it. The grudge really can't be solved.....so he had to switch the crown prince.

Chu Mo felt a little disbelief with this thought first sprouted forth. He thought to himself: 'Since when did I no longer place royal authority in my eyes?'

Because of this, Chu Mo truly understood the fundamental reason why sects loft high above.

At a certain level of power, all the constraints and rules.....they really become a decoration.

Following the rules was giving face. But if you didn't follow the rules, no one could do anything about it!

[“The strong use force to break the rules.”](#) Chu Mo mumbled: “No wonder the most nasty former rulers.....were those great experts.”

[TL: The full phrase is something like ‘The strong use force to break the rules, and scholars use the pen.’ The author only referenced the first half.]

Chu Mo told Miao Yiniang more or less everything after seeing her. At the end, he said to Miao Yiniang: “The emperor needed to rest at ease. Therefore, I couldn’t consult with big sister, and acted without permission. The position of dean has been given to the royal family.”

Miao Yiniang Captivatingly smiled: “Isn’t this already the best result? Otherwise, how could the emperor allow such a power to be established right below his eyelids?”

Miao Yiniang gazed at Chu Mo with starry eyes as she spoke: “Young master, thank you!”

Chapter 131: Deadly Trap

Half a month later, a shocking piece of news came from Yellow Flame City.

“Miao Yiniang, the disciple of the Misty Palace, the former top sect of the Vermilion Bird continent, has combined with Da Xia’s royal family in Yellow Flame City. She established a top grade school named the Misty Palace Royal Academy.”

“Da Xia’s royal highness the emperor was made the academy’s first dean!”

“The academy’s goal is to train even more talent for Da Xia.

“The academy has top grade high level scriptures, exercises, and several classic records only available in the best sects. These things will be completely free to the outstanding talents of Da Xia!”

“So as long as you have talent, ability, determination, and patriotism, then.....you will have the qualifications to become a Misty Palace Royal Academy disciple! You can become a true emperor’s disciple! It doesn’t matter if you are born into a noble family or a poor household, both will be treated the equally!”

This news was like rolling thunder, exploding out with a loud sound in the early spring of Da Xia.

.....

Pa!

A crisp sound came from the study of the crown prince at the Eastern Palace.

An antique porcelain from a former dynasty shattered on the ground.

Crown prince Xia Ying held a ferocious and warped expression. He cursed: "Little animal Chu Mo, calmly daring to bully me like this!"

Xia Xiong, who always shadowed the crown prince, didn't look happy either. He sat there, both eyes despondent, softly saying: "His move was quite beautiful, easily moving his status to such a height. That's not even the most important part. After the academy was established, the students of the sect were called the emperor's disciples, but in reality, they are personally raised by Miao Yiniang and Chu Mo. Who they will be closer to is plain as day."

"He deserves death. How can such a little animal be so frustrating? Don't tell me father can't see his wild ambitions? Actually ignoring him over and over again." Xia Ying was spoke outraged: "We must think of a way to put down this little animal!"

Xia Xiong shook his head, saying: "It's difficult. This little thing has a mysterious and powerful master supporting him. Once we move against him, his master certainly won't sit and watch."

“Don’t tell me that we’re going to sit back and watch the little animal we can’t deal with grow up?” Xia Ying grimly spoke.

“Of course we can’t.” Xia Ying mumbled: “We should think of a way to place our people inside. We might not be able to reach the higher levels of the academy, but at least.....we can breach the middle layer. Later on we can conspire, and think of a way to bring this academy into our hands.”

Xia Ying’s pupils flickered with a bitter light: “I never thought Miao Yiniang was actually a disciple from a formerly famous Vermilion Bird continent sect. It would be good to think of a way to win her over.”

Xia Xiong slightly wrinkled his brow. He suddenly smiled: “Brother, I have a plan.”

“Speak.” Looking at Xia Xiong, Xia Ying finally calmed his rage down a little at this time.

Xia Xiong said: “Father holds the position of dean. Obviously he doesn’t entirely trust them. Only a fool couldn’t see the future prospects of a power like this. Since this is the case, how about we send father some reassurance?”

“How do we send it? Xia Ying asked.

Xia Xiong laughed: “Miao Yiniang.....is absolutely stunning.

Several people say she is Yellow Flame City's most beautiful woman! Originally, she didn't have the qualifications to be related to the royal family. She's beautiful, but only a restaurant owner. But now.....things aren't the same."

Xia Xiong's eyes slightly squinted: "Not only is Miao Yiniang a former core disciple of the Vermilion Bird continent's once greatest sect, but.....she is also the highest level person in the Misty Palace Royal Academy! Ha ha, father is the dean, yet she is the master!"

"You mean.....have father make her a concubine?" Xia Ying squinted and asked.

Xia Xiong shook his head: "Father is already growing old, and there are countless beauties in the palace. Is he lacking beauty? Which one have you seen father adore? Also, if father takes her as a concubine, he will receive the criticism of the people. Father will certainly refuse if we make this suggestion, and he will angrily scold our ill-intentions."

"Then what do you mean?" Xia Ying looked confused.

"My meaning brother.....is marry this woman!" Xia xiong darkly laughed: "Brother is the crown prince, marrying a lackluster large sect disciple is fundamentally lifting her up. Furthermore, this will make father even more relaxed! Moreover, the most important thing is this. Brother can use this to make an impression on father. That is to say.....wishing to pacify relations with Chu Mo! Like this, father has absolutely no reason to refuse!"

A light of temptation flashed across Xia Ying's eyes. Miao Yiniang's title of most beautiful woman wasn't granted by just anyone. The whole of Yellow Flame City publicly acknowledged this!"

Just as Xia Xiong said, Miao Yiniang's current status is completely different than before. Now marrying her wasn't a loss.

"Your suggestion isn't bad, but won't father suspect we want to control the academy?" Xia Ying spoke while slightly wrinkling his brow.

"Brother, you are over worrying. Don't tell me you've forgotten? Father.....is the academy dean!" Xia Xiong smiled.

"Saying it like this.....this matter.....is feasible?"

"Of course it's feasible!" Xia Xiong smiled: "Not only can we control a large portion of the academy, but we can also give that little thing a heavy blow! I hear he and Miao Yiniang are like brother and sister. But women ah.....no matter how much they like their little brother, after getting married, they will be closer to the husband."

"Ha ha ha ha, I really want to know, what expression will that little animal have after he finds out?" Xia Ying's rage turned to joy, revealing a smile.

“Brother, actually.....” Xia Xiong looked at Xia Ying, and slightly hesitated.

“Come out and say it. We are brothers, do you need to hide?” Xia Ying was in a good mood, smiling as he spoke.

Xia Xiong nodded and said: “Actually, if there’s an opportunity, I suggest you ease relations with that little thing.”

Xia Ying’s complexion sank, indignantly saying: “Not possible! He beheaded Zhao Yi right before my face. He also made third brother exiled to the far north, to that land of bitter cold. He can’t come back for ten years. I could never make peace with him! Never mention this again!”

Xia Xiong still had half a sentence stuck in his throat, but didn’t utter it. He actually wanted to tell the crown prince, father seemed to love Chu Mo!

He also has the support of the military Marshal and the Grand Secretary.

This youth’s connections are strong enough to scare people!

No matter the emperor or these two civil and military chiefs. These three people can control countless lives with a casual thought. It simply makes no sense that they all favor a teenager.

Even if he were the emperor’s bastard son.....it still wouldn’t be

possible!

Not even his own son gets this kind of treatment, let alone a bastard.

So, there must be something strange!

Although Xia Xiong couldn't guess the reason right now, his intuition was telling him something. This whole situation certainly wasn't simple. If done wrong, this situation could escalate up to the national level.

It's a pity that Xia Ying didn't give him a chance to continue speaking. Xia Xiong just spoke one sentence, and Xia Ying became enraged right away.

Xia Xiong secretly sighed to himself. He could only temporarily set this thought aside.

Chapter 133: Turbulent Times

This news not only shocked Da Xia's crown prince at the Eastern Palace.

The Vermilion Bird Association branch located within the Azure Dragon continent also received an enormous shock.

Actually, this branch of the Vermilion Bird Association already experienced a piece of violent shocking news earlier.

A gold rank elder, a silver rank deacon, and two bronze stewards that were about to promote to silver rank at any time, this four man team could easily massacre a city!

But they were completely annihilated, cut down within Da Xia's Yellow Flame City.

Don't mention the branch within the Azure Dragon continent, even the Vermilion Bird Association headquarters suffered an enormous shock.

Especially those two bronze rank stewards. One was one of the Misty Palace's twelve disciples, and the other was the son of an elder in a medium size sect in the Vermilion Bird continent.

The death of the former was irrelevant. After all, her portion of the heritage was already taken by the Vermilion Bird Association. But the latter's death made the higher level crowd of the Vermilion

Bird Association branch have quite the headache.

Because everyone knew, that medium size sect elder not only was extremely powerful, but he extremely loved his son!

He belonged to one of those types: A father that kills a whole family for the death of his son.

How could a person like this let things go when his son dies? Even if there is someone responsible for every grievance, the Vermilion Bird Association branch will have a headache for a while at least.

The thing they couldn't accept the most was the loss of the gold rank elder.

An imposing gold rank elder, a rank six cultivator.....unhindered in the secular world, he was actually lost in Yellow Flame City?

Don't say this was an Azure Dragon Court person's doing?

The Vermilion Bird Association members knew that they extended their reach a little far with this one, and were fishing a little out of bounds. The Azure Dragon Court's dissatisfaction was expected.

Especially when this involved a portion of the Misty Palace heritage!

Who doesn't know the priceless value!

Because of this, the Azure Dragon Court really had a reason to act against those people.

Therefore, the Vermilion Bird Association at first casted their suspicious looks toward the Azure Dragon Court.

But they also knew that the Azure Dragon Court members would never acknowledge it, even if it really was them.

The Vermilion Bird Association also couldn't find any evidence.

As far as Da Xia's royal family, the Vermilion Bird Association originally didn't even place them in their eyes.

According to the higher ups of the Vermilion Bird Association, they were right in not seeking trouble for Da Xia's royal family. Unless Da Xia's royalty ate the heart of a bear and guts of a leopard, they would never dare provoke the Vermilion Bird Association.

So the Vermilion Bird Association branch completely ignored Da Xia's royal family.

In their opinion, they only needed to find Miao Yiniang. Then all of their current troubles would be easily solved.

But this action must be carefully and cautiously done. They just lost a gold rank elder after all, and they couldn't imagine losing another.

But without waiting for Vermilion Bird Association branch take a plan of action, another shocking piece of news came forth.

This news caught the entire Vermilion Bird Association off guard, and also made them extremely furious!

The royal family of Da Xia, the one they never placed in their eyes, and the Misty Palace remnant that should be hiding scared and desperate in a dark corner, they actually had the nerve to ally together.

They used the Misty Palace heritage to establish a new Misty Palace!

Although it was a royal academy in title, they dared used a mocking name like the Misty Palace Royal Academy.

Who couldn't see that this was the rebirth of the Misty Palace?

This action ruthlessly struck the ears of all the Vermilion Bird continent sects!

It was also a slap to the Vermilion Bird Association's face.

This was open provocation!

Furthermore, it was a recklessly wild provocation!

Was this little bitch crazy?

Who gave her so much courage?

Could it be that she isn't afraid of the sects that extinguished the Misty Palace? The ones that immediately started to hunt her down?

What made the Vermilion Bird Association even more indignant was Da Xia's royal family!

A small.....secular world royal authority that they never placed in their eyes, actually dared shelter the Misty Palace remnants?

This was madness!

Weren't they afraid of all the sects combining and confronting them?

Don't say the hand cannot extend so far, and that the authority was outside the continent, separated by the a long and difficult journey.

This kind of thinking was called naive!

Several sects from the Vermilion Bird continent might not directly do anything to Da Xia. Da Xia's royal family has powerful sects supporting them after all.

However, they can support Da Xia's rival nations!

Such as Da Qi!

They can't help with open arms, but doesn't money always work?

So the Vermilion Bird Association couldn't understand at all. Where did the Misty Palace remnant and Da Xia's royal family find the courage to oppose almost all the sects in the Vermilion Bird continent?

Was it because of the Azure Dragon Court?

Several Vermilion Bird Association higher ups that were located in the Azure Dragon continent all held this kind of suspicion, and were incomparably angered at the same time.

No matter how angry, this matter was already finished, and became fact.

The Vermilion Bird Association must face this matter, and give a

direct counterattack!

Otherwise, the Vermilion Bird Association reputation would suffer a heavy loss.

Because of this, several of the the Vermilion Bird Association branch higher-ups came to a conclusion. They would take two matters and combine them into one.

They would send a diplomatic group to Da Xia. They would initiate talks with the Azure Dragon Court and Da Xia's royal family!

The first condition doesn't need to be mentioned, but this nuisance Misty Palace Royal Academy.....must certainly disappear from the world!

At the same time, this news quickly returned to the Vermilion Bird continent.

The sects that participated in the siege on the Misty Palace, once they heard the news, they all immediately went mad!

The sent out the most outstanding sect disciples right away, combined them with the other sects, and formed an expedition group. They planned to strangle the Misty Palace Royal Academy while still in the cradle.

Their goal was exactly the same as the Vermilion Bird

Association.

No matter what, they couldn't let the Misty Palace reappear in any shape or form.

However, not everyone thought this way.

For instance, the misty palace disciples that fled back then; however, they were only twelve!

By contrast, this news was like a storm inside Da Xia, instantly sweeping each corner of the land!

The passion of the people soared to a level that not even the instigator Chu Mo dared believe.

But he quickly understood the reason.

The sects were always grand and magnificent. When did they ever touch the people?

Although it carried the Royal Academy name, but who couldn't see it? This Misty Palace Royal Academy was actually a path to a sect.

A sect established in the secular world!

In truth there were several high level scriptures and exercises, as well as all kinds of high level heritages.

The great majority of warriors in this world would have a tough time just touching a trace of these things!

Now.....they had a chance to study these priceless exercises!

Try asking, who wouldn't want to come to this kind of place?

No matter if noble or poor, everyone went mad right away.

Practically all the self-claimed talented noble children in Yellow Flame City were racking their brains trying to get in. Because of this, in a short period of time, everyone showed up at the households of Chu Mo, Xu Fufu, and even Miao Yiniang's Gluttonous Ogre!

Countless people stopped in for a visit, thinking to find a place inside the Misty Palace Royal Academy.

Faced with this situation, Chu Mo, Xu Fufu, and Miao Yiniang could only hide away, afraid to return home.

Because there would always be a relation that wouldn't let you refuse.

The palace sent out a decree in the end.

They fiercely denounced this kind of chaos, ordering those noble houses to regulate themselves, and not dare cause any more harassment. Otherwise, their household's ability to enter the academy would be cancelled. Those talents somewhat controlled themselves.

However, a second decree soon after made Miao Yiniang dumbstruck, and it made Chu Mo infuriated!

Chapter 133: Grant A Marriage

Grant a marriage!

The emperor's second degree was actually to grant a marriage, and make her marry the crown prince Xia Ying!

Miao Yiniang was the person who knew most about the grudge between Xia Ying and Chu Mo, despite whatever she wanted. The emperor's motives were enough to make her feel astonished: "The peach tree hasn't even been planted, and you're already plucking it?"

Chu Mo was also extremely furious, and he also felt extreme disappointment towards the emperor.

In the two times Chu Mo met the emperor, he always felt the ruler was an extremely open-minded person. The scope of vision between the emperor and the princes was the gap between heaven and earth.

Like how the emperor clearly knew about Chu Mo and the crown prince's grudges, but he still favored Chu Mo. He even dared place Chu Mo in important positions. This was the bearing and vision of a ruler, as well as strong self-confidence!

But what was the meaning of this decree?

The wording of the decree wasn't harsh, but there was no

consulting!

It said Miao Yiniang was a former Vermilion Bird Continent high level disciple. She was of noble birth, good character, and excellent temperament.....although the sect collapsed, but she possessed firm will, and determined self-improvement. Such an outstanding woman completely matched the future ruler of Da Xia, the current crown prince!

The two marrying would be beneficial for the Misty Palace Royal Academy's future.

The decree also mentioned, once the secular world sect was established, not only will it attract the attention of current enemies, but it will also be coveted by countless Azure Dragon continent sects. In order to guarantee the unfolding of the Misty Palace Royal Academy doesn't suffer any influence, the two sides ought to establish an even closer relationship.

Now when facing any difficulties in the future, the Da Xia royal family will have even more reason to protect the Misty Palace Royal Academy and Miao Yiniang.

By only looking at the decree, and not knowing the people involved, one would certainly think the emperor was too brilliant, and Miao Yiniang was also qualified.

She was a sect disciple without a home to return to. By marrying his majesty the crown prince, she will become a princess! She can't fly up and become a phoenix, but at the very least.....this was

enough to show the royal family's sincerity and importance attached.

Yes, a person who doesn't understand the grudge between Chu Mo and the crown prince would certainly think this way.

But the people with a common understanding of the events were all astonished.

“What spell is the emperor under? He actually put out such a stupid decree?” The always joking Xu Fufu carried an ice-cold expression at this time. His eyes flickered with a furious light: “Does he want to make this thing die in the womb?”

Chu Mo quickly cooled down after his fury. He sat there, appearing bitter, and painfully said: “This matter.....blame me!”

“How could I blame you?” Miao Yiniang looked at Chu Mo: “The ones to blame.....are all of us. Our experience still wasn't enough.”

“No, it's not like that.” Chu Mo somewhat bitterly spoke: “I thought of the threats from the Vermilion Bird continent sects, Vermilion Bird Association, and even.....the Azure Dragon continent sects. I thought of them all. Moreover, I thought of ways to respond. But.....I overlooked the emperor's view towards this matter, and his appetite.”

Chu Mo sighed. He looked to Miao Yiniang and Xu Fufu: “Before, I believed without a doubt. I only needed to add the royal family

name to the sect, and grant the emperor the position of leader. Then later on, continuously train high-level talent for the emperor. The emperor would certainly be moved, and finally agree. However, I underestimated the appeal of the Misty Palace heritage to the secular world people. I forgot the emperor is a man of the mortal world. He isn't a god! Faced with the heritage of a top grade sect, merely being the spiritual leader couldn't fill his appetite. His thinking.....was to take this heritage and power, and fully make it become the royal family's power!"

Miao Yiniang silently nodded: "I never dared to expose this portion of the heritage after all these years. It was exactly because of this reason."

Chu Mo looked at Miao Yiniang: "Why didn't you stop me?"

Miao Yiniang bitterly smiled: "My existence is no longer a secret. This heritage would be exposed to the people sooner or later. We actually had no other choice. I think.....the emperor should take a little. Don't we have nothing to fear under this decree?"

Chu Mo was silent a moment, then nodded: "Right, otherwise, the emperor would have consulted with me first."

Xu Fufu raged from the side: "What to do now? Do we never respond? It would be too funny if we did that!"

Miao Yiniang quietly said: "Actually, this is no laughing matter for the emperor. In his opinion, the only think that can give me shelter now.....is Da Xia's royal family. Without this, everyone

would relentlessly scrape at me.....and swallow until there was nothing left. This is his way of giving me a dignified way out. Heh, by becoming the crown prince's wife, he's actually exalting me."

Chu Mo looked livid. This loss was actually a little too much for him to swallow. And now that the news was already out, there was practically no escape.

If you ride a tiger, it's hard to get off!

The emperor was also certain that they wouldn't revolt.

Would they really crash into the royal palace, and cause a scene with the emperor? There was no other possibility apart from completely breaking off relations with the emperor.

After all, a ruler absolutely cannot suffer such a threat.

"We will stealthily take out the crown prince!" Xu Fufu's pupils were clear and cold. He looked at the two and said: "When the crown prince dies, this decree will fall through!"

"Nonsense." Chu Mo stared at Xu Fufu: "Even if we can kill the crown prince without the gods or demons knowing, wouldn't the emperor set up another one? Can we stealthily kill everything? Besides, if we act against the crown prince now, do you think the emperor wouldn't know who did it?"

"Then what's to be done? Are you really going to watch big sister

Yiniang marry that bastard?” Xu Fufu soared up from his seat, and furiously stared at Chu Mo: “Don’t you know Yiniang’s feelings for you? You’ve been hesitating back and forth, are you a man or not?”

“If I’m not a man then what are you? Go back and ask your grandfather. What’s his good solution? What are you yelling with me for?” Chu Mo was also furious. He said to Xu Fufu: “Did I say that I wanted big sister to marry the crown prince?”

“Your current reaction and expression gives me that feeling. Hesitating! You’re making me lose hope!” Xu Fufu looked furious as he spoke. He directly turned and left, slamming the door on the way out.

Boom!

The heavy wooden door made an enormous noise.

Chu Mo and Miao Yiniang looked at each other in dismay.

Miao Yiniang smiled in spite of herself, and he hugged at Chu Mo: “You two.....really haven’t fought like this after all these years?”

“I’m pissed!” Chu Mo let out a long breath: “He has a dog temper!”

“You have a dog temper.” Miao Yiniang rolled her eyes at Chu

Mo: “Do you dare say, you haven’t thought about killing the crown prince? Didn’t you deliberately make him storm off?”

Chu Mo rolled his eyes, but he didn’t deny. He simply said: “2Fu and I aren’t the same in the end. I can do things that he can’t!”

“You also can’t!” Miao Yiniang leaned into the chair, revealing her perfect figure. Her gorgeous eyes gazed at Chu Mo: “Actually, the matter hasn’t reached the most horrible part. Am I right?”

Chu Mo nodded: “Of course, let’s say we don’t agree, or even if we do agree, isn’t a bride theft still possible?”

Pffft!

Miao Yiniang almost sprayed saliva. She looked at Chu Mo and said: “Snatching a royal family marriage.....you dare think, but, if you dare do it, you’ll probably be the first in history.”

Just as Chu Mo was about to speak, a knock suddenly came from outside. Miao Yiniang’s trusted maid said from outside: “Little sister, noble son Chu, a maiden outside named Chen Xingxue wishes to see you. She says that she is noble son Chu Mo’s friend.”

Miao Yiniang and Chu Mo looked at each other.

Chu Mo wrinkled his brow: “Princess? Why has she come?”

Chapter 134: Lonely City One Sword, Foreign Heaven Flying Immortal

The last time Chu Mo saw the princess was at the new year's banquet.

At that time, Chen Xingxue said that she would come to find him, but there was never any activity afterwards. Chu Mo didn't put much thought into it. According to him, the princess not coming to find him was a good thing.

Now she suddenly came for a visit at such a sensitive time, moreover.....she came to a place like Gluttonous Ogre, and directly sought Chu Mo. She obviously knew Chu Mo was here.

Miao Yiniang stood up, and softly said: "Since the princess has come to find you, it's best I go. I will step away for a moment."

Chu Mo waved his hand: "Don't, she certainly didn't come at this time to only see me. Let's all meet together."

As he spoke, Chu Mo made the outside maid bring Chen Xingxue over.

Very quickly, a knock appeared at the door. The maid brought in a girl that was covered in a heavy veil. The maid withdrew and closed the door after letting the girl enter.

The young maiden finally pulled back her veil at this time, revealing the delicate face of a bright-eyed girl.

First she looked at Miao Yiniang, and the girl slightly curtsied: “You are big sister Miao Yiniang right? I am Chen Xingxue.”

Chu Mo slightly squinted. He noticed Chen Xingxue addressed herself as a young girl.....and she also first sent respects. This was enough to show that she didn't take herself for a princess. Otherwise, she would have waited for Miao Yiniang to bow down first.

Miao Yiniang was slightly shocked. She immediately bowed, then smiled and said: “Your highness is too polite. We've never met before, please forgive me your highness.”

Chen Xingxue's face turned slightly red: “Big sister must not be so polite to me, and don't take me for a princess. If big sister doesn't oppose, please call me little sister. It would make me very happy.”

Chen Xingxue looked at Chu Mo as she spoke, then softly said: “I came to give you two an apology!”

“Apologize? What are you talking about little sister?” Miao Yiniang walked over and pulled Chen Xingxue to a seat. Then she personally poured Chen Xingxue a cup of tea.

Chen Xingxue held the cup with both hands. She looked timid,

and blinked once at Chu Mo. She said: “You see, noble son Chu doesn’t look happy at all. I know the reason why. I came here exactly because of this reason.”

Chu Mo looked over at Chen Xingxue, and simply said: “This matter has nothing to do with you princess. You really didn’t need to come to apologize.” Chu Mo’s attitude was a little cold, but it was for Chen Xingxue’s own good. He didn’t want this princess to be dragged into it at all.

Chen Xingxue carefully glanced at Chu Mo, and quietly said: “This matter is originally my father’s mistake. He shouldn’t have done it. Noble son has done a great kindness to me, and I also know that noble son isn’t the type to carry wild schemes.”

Chu Mo was slightly stunned, and he immediately spoke with a bitter smile: “But your father doesn’t necessarily think that way.”

Chen Xingxue slightly shook her head: “Actually father.....also trusts noble son, only.....only.....”

“Only as a ruler, the habit is to place everything in their control. Isn’t that right?” Miao Yiniang quietly said.

“Yes, just like that, but I think father doesn’t need to do this.” Chen Xingxue looked at Miao Yiniang, and seriously spoke: “I have a way to resolve this matter.”

“Yes?” Miao Yiniang looked at Chen Xingxue.

Chen Xingxue softly spoke: “My master’s sect is one hidden from the world. It’s one of those that doesn’t officially exist. The sect disciples don’t even walk the world. Moreover, they won’t care about big sister Yiniang’s Misty Palace heritage. My master.....is that sect’s leader. He is very good to me. I can bring big sister into my sect. Like this, the matter should be resolved.”

Chu Mo shook his head: “You really haven’t resolved the problem like this.”

Miao Yiniang also spoke: “The news has already been released. The royal family cannot lose the trust of the people. Therefore, the Misty Palace Royal Academy must be founded.”

Chen Xingxue looked at Miao Yiniang, and quietly spoke: “Big sister and noble son are truly good people. You’re still considering the royal family reputation at this time. We can actually do it like this. Big sister will leave her heritage with noble son Chu. She can leave with me after the academy is founded.”

“What about your father?” Chu Mo looked at Chen Xingxue, and plainly spoke: “Don’t tell me the decree will expire?”

Chen Xingxue nodded in all seriousness: “So long as big sister comes with me to the sect, father’s decree will lose validity.”

At this time, Miao Yiniang asked Chen Xingxue: “I still don’t even know little sister’s sect?”

Chen Xingxue quietly said: “Flying Immortal.”

Chu Mo never heard of this name, so he reacted very normal.

But Miao Yiniang was suddenly transfixed. Her delicate face revealed a shocked color, and she looked at Chen Xingxue: “That Flying Immortal?”

Chen Xingxue nodded: “This world only should only have one Flying Immortal.”

“Heavens.....” Miao Yiniang couldn’t help but gasp. Then she mumbled: “No wonder.....you’re so confident. This self-confidence.....comes from.....the Flying Immortal. Also, only this sect could say it doesn’t care about the Misty Palace heritage.”

Chu Mo confusingly looked Miao Yiniang. He didn’t understand why she was showing such an expression.

Miao Yiniang gave Chu Mo an explanation: “There are numerous sects of all sizes on our four continents, no less than several hundred. But there are very few top grade sects. The Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermilion Bird, and Black Tortoise continents only have about one top grade sect each. Such as the Azure Dragon continent’s Immortal Sky, such as.....Vermilion Bird Continent’s former Misty Palace.”

Miao Yiniang’s expression became a little dark: “Only the Misty

Palace is already gone, but on the four continents, there are actually even more amazing existences than these top grade sects!”

“Even more amazing?” Chu Mo knew this world held a few hidden sects, but he always believed sects like the Immortal Sky were the strongest ones.

“Of course.” Miao Yiniang softly said to Chen Xingxue: “Lonely City One Sword, Foreign Heaven Flying Immortal!”

Chen Xingxue revealed a slight smile, and then nodded. Miao Yiniang knew about Flying Immortal, which let Xingxue not waste many words.

“Lonely City One Sword, Foreign Heaven Flying Immortal? These are two sects?” Chu Mo asked.

“No, these are four sects!” Miao Yiniang slightly smiled: “Lonely City is a sect; One Sword is a sect; Foreign Heaven and Flying Immortal are also two sects. I only heard of these four sects back in the day. Very rarely do people meet the disciples of these four sects, because these disciples practically never appear in the secular world.”

Miao Yiniang said to Chen Xingxue: “I never thought, little sister Xingxue.....is actually a Flying Immortal disciple. It’s truly unforeseen. However.....only a Flying Immortal disciple would be like you.....completely lacking in combat ability, but amazing in all other aspects.”

Chen Xingxue's cute face turned slightly red, and she quietly said: "I'm not so outstanding, my mother was the Flying Immortal member."

Chu Mo looked at Chen Xingxue: "The emperor mentioned your past once....."

Chen Xingxue nodded, and softly said: "My mother went searching for a drug ingredient back then. Because the guardian had to leave temporarily, my mother encountered danger. She carelessly suffered a serious injury, and was fortunately saved by my father. Father liked my mother at first glance, and my mother.....was the same as me, completely lacking in combat ability."

Chen Xingxue spoke to here, and her face became deep red. Her brow slightly wrinkled, as if she didn't know what to say next.

Chu Mo seemed to somewhat understand, yet Miao Yiniang completely understood. Because there was a tangent in the topic, she said to Chen Xingxue: "A sect like Flying Immortal must have incredibly strict requirements. Am I good enough?"

Chen Xingxue's eyes twinkled: "Even if it doesn't work, big sister will have left with me. No one else will know right?"

Chapter 135: Slightest Hope

“.....” Chu Mo and Miao Yiniang somewhat confusingly raised their heads, taken aback by Chen Xingxue.

They never imagined. This shy frail little girl appeared pure, innocent, and somewhat foolish to the point of looking stupid.

In reality, not only was she not stupid, but her IQ was quite high!

They originally believed there was only one reason Chen Xingxue paid them a visit, and that was to give an apology on behalf of the emperor. However, this girl who didn't seem like a princess in the least bit, and was completely like a girl next door, she actually possessed such astonishingly powerful backing.

Lonely City One Sword, Foreign Heaven Flying Immortal!

There weren't many who knew of these four hidden sects. Some of the small and medium sect disciples had never even heard of them before. But anyone qualified to know knew these four sects was completely full of awe towards them. No one would miss out on the opportunity to make friends with the disciples of these four sects, not even Immortal Sky elders.

By a strange combination of circumstances, Chen Xingxue's mother had relations with Da Xa's emperor. After one night of happiness, there was Chen Xingxue. According to the Flying Immortal rules, disciples could not have any relations with secular world people. Therefore, Chen Xingxue's mother directly returned

to the sect while pregnant, and gave birth to Chen Xingxue within the sect.

This basically fit with what the emperor said in the past, but the emperor certainly couldn't say how many moves he used when encountering Chen Xingxue's mother.....

If it wasn't for the innocent Chen Xingxue speaking about this, than outsiders might never know the truth.

When it came to this kind of thing, given that Chu Mo and Miao Yiniang knew about it, they would never put the information to use.

But when faced with Chen Xingxue's suggestion, Chu Mo and Miao Yiniang were both somewhat touched.

The royal family acted first, and already showed their mean and ferocious teeth. This matter already had no escape.

Actually, Miao Yiniang already resigned her cultivation path's future. But if there was a chance to walk to a higher realm, who would really give up?

Especially with Miao Yiniang's power. She already reached the golden stone realm. Although she relied on pills to rank up to this realm, she felt that there was still room to increase.

If she really entered Flying Immortal at this time, who would

dare say that she would be stuck at the golden stone realm her whole life?

“How about it? Has big sister thought it over?” Chen Xingxue’s eyes twinkled, carrying a lot of hope. She looked at Miao Yiniang: “Big sister doesn’t need to worry about anything. Flying Immortal has only female disciples! There are no men! Otherwise if.....”

Chen Xingxue carefully looked at Chu Mo. Her lips slightly moved, and that sentence never left her mouth.

Miao Yiniang said to Chu Mo: “Young master.....help me make a decision. I.....I somewhat don’t know what to do.”

Chu Mo said Miao Yiniang: “Actually big sister has already made a decision in her heart. Am I right?” Chu Mo looked towards Chen Xingxue: “Princess Xingxue, are you truly certain big sister can enter Flying Immortal? Princess, I want you to clearly understand what I mean. Things aren’t as simple as other people think.”

Chen Xingxue was silent a moment, then she looked to Miao Yiniang: “May I ask, what is big sister’s current realm?”

Miao Yiniang smiled: “Golden stone, from pills.”

Chen Xingxue was immediately stupefied. She had no combat ability, but that didn’t mean she lacked understanding of this world’s cultivation realms.

“Big sister is actually a golden stone realm expert?”

Miao Yiniang wryly smiled at Chen Xingxue: “Could it be little sister didn’t hear the last two words?”

Chen Xingxue nodded, then seriously spoke: “The greatest pill master in Flying Immortal, even he has a hard time creating such pills, pills that can make a person increase to the golden stone realm. It’s truly fortunate. Big sister can very easily enter Flying Immortal like this! You could succeed even without my recommendation.”

“There’s no more room to increase after using pills. Flying Immortal still wants these kinds of people?” Miao Yiniang almost didn’t dare believe Chen Xingxue. Maybe if she wasn’t from Flying Immortal, and maybe from a sect like Immortal Sky or the former Misty Palace, then easily entering would be much more believable.

But this was Flying Immortal!

This was truly the highest peak of existence in the world!

How could their standards of acceptance be the same as others?

Chen Xingxue looked serious: “Actually I am a pill refinement master, although I can’t refine that high level pills. But my understanding of medicine is still very clear. Pills can be taken to increase to the golden stone realm, and it severs the future path.....This saying isn’t wrong, but there are exceptions.”

“Exceptions?” Miao Yiniang’s eyes lit up at Chen Xingxue.

Actually when she consumed the pills, and improved to the golden stone realm, she secretly held a feeling: It seemed her path.....wasn’t completely broken off!

The shackles from the bone to intent refinement period were quite sturdy, but they weren’t without cracks!

This was completely different from the knowledge that Miao Yiniang always understood.

Now hearing Chen Xingxue’s words, the depths of her heart couldn’t help but burn with hope.

“Yes, there are exceptions.” Chen Xingxue nodded with certainty: “For instance, some people have very powerful aptitude and comprehension. Just because they take pills, it doesn’t mean they can’t break into the intent refinement period.”

“There is also another possibility, although the probability is extremely small, but it exists.” Chen Xingxue looked at Miao Yiniang: “That is, a pill refinement master can create a perfect pill with extreme luck! Although they lack the endless grinding and experience of normal cultivators, their future cultivation path won’t be influenced at all. Only, that possibility is too small. Perfect pills only exist in legends. So that possibility is the lowest.”

“Perfect pill.....” Miao Yiniang didn’t understand much about pills, but she knew the young master’s pill refinement ability was quite magical! He even treated Xia Jing’s illness, which no one else could cure. Refining perfect pills may not be impossible!

Chen Xingxue said: “Suppose a person consumed a perfect golden stone pill. Then, they only need to take time to accumulate and condense, and make up for the lack of improving oneself through practice. They need to wait until the body tempers to a point where it can support the intent refinement period pressures, and then, they can naturally break into the intent refinement period.”

Chen Xingxue looked at Miao Yiniang with a slight smile: “Big sister is one of the twelve Misty Palace disciples, so she certainly doesn’t lack aptitude and comprehension. So don’t lose heart about imperfect pills. Flying Immortal has even more powerful scriptures and exercises. They should let big sister increase to a higher realm. Even if it’s not possible. Big sister is already at the golden stone realm. In Flying Immortal, you will be a top rank at your age!”

Miao Yiniang cast a glance at Chu Mo once again. Chu Mo nodded: “This is good!”

Miao Yiniang immediately expressed a glittering smile. She looked at Chen Xingxue, and softly said: “Xingxue, thank you!”

Chen Xingxue’s face turned red: “Big sister doesn’t need to be so polite. This is what I should do!”

Miao Yiniang looked at Chu Mo, and secretly thought to herself: 'My young master, I will certainly work hard! Even if there is only the slightest hope, I won't give up on any chance to improve! One day, I will genuinely help you.'

Chapter 136: Sentiments

Miao Yiniang left very abruptly.

She disappeared together with princess Chen Xingxue, who didn't have much presence in the royal palace.

This event didn't cause great waves in Yellow Flame City.

Gluttonous Ogre was already completely managed by Liu Mei'er. This business had been passed over a long time ago. In addition, Miao Yiniang always kept a low-profile, and very rarely appeared in public.

Even more so, princess Chen Xingxue practically never appeared in front of people, making her quite the oddity in the royal palace.

Because of this, when the two departed, it seemed the waves weren't shocking.

But this caused a perilous situation to a few people!

Not many people knew about the marriage decree from the emperor, but crown prince Xia Ying and second prince Xia Xiong knew.

"Miao Yiniang actually dares fight the emperor's decree! Is she tired of living?" Xia Ying was truly enraged this time. A ruler's son

and future king was actually ignored by a homeless sect disciple? That kind of feeling made him extremely furious!

Xia Xiong sighed, and said in a low voice: “Brother, we considered a thousand calculations, but we didn’t think about little sister.”

“What little sister? She counts for nothing!” Xia Ying gnashed his teeth: “This little sister with an [outward turning elbow](#)?”

[TL: An outward turning elbow means to favor outsiders instead of family.]

Xia Xiong bitterly smiled: “Don’t become so angry brother. This can be considered retribution. We once schemed against little sister, and now she has broken a matter that was completely settled.”

“Little bitch! [I have](#) no little sister!” Xia Ying ferociously spoke: “The source of this matter is Chu Mo, that little animal! No good, [I have](#) reached the breaking point. Xia Xiong, immediately think of a plan for me. [I want](#) this little animal Chu Mo.....[I want](#) his bones turned to ashes, his corpse cut into ten thousand pieces!”

[TL: When Xia Ying says ‘I’ here, he uses the term ‘孤.’ It’s how a feudal prince refers to himself in the first person.]

Seeing the ferocious and twisted face of his elder brother, a trace of concern flashed across Xia Xiong’s eyes.

It had been a long time since Xia Ying referred to himself as a

feudal prince before Xia Xiong.

Not so long ago, prince Xia Ying carried somewhat dark sentiments, but not too much. Generally speaking, he had the qualifications of a crown prince. Xia Xiong willingly gave up his chance to obtain everything, and supported his elder brother.

But ever since that incident last year, Xia Ying's attitude seemed to have a tremendous change. His psychological state grew even darker. He began to bicker over every little thing, and he became vindictive.

As a person of power, he could use all kinds of tricks. He could secretly, ruthlessly, and even very maliciously.....obtain his goals.

But at the same time, he must have a broad open mind!

In Xia Xiong's opinion, apart from detestable things like killing someone's father or stealing their wife, the truly irreconcilable things, all other grudges can be forgiven. For people of power, this world has no such thing as eternal enemies, and it doesn't have eternal friends. There is only eternal benefit.

Just like his father the emperor!

Did the emperor really like Chu Mo that much?

This was truly not certain!

Even if he liked, or even loved, there couldn't possibly be anything more.

After all, there was a powerful master behind Chu Mo, and he might hate secular world authority. Any person of power would be wary towards a youth like him. Who would have complete trust?

This Misty Palace Royal Academy was a perfect example.

But Xia Ying couldn't see any of this, and he didn't want to see. His mind was completely full of hatred towards Chu Mo.

Like this.....he could easily fall into danger!

Xia Xiong couldn't help but sigh on the inside. Although he made several schemes to harm people, he always had a perspective. One must consider the circumstances.

The right words must be said at the right time.

And right now, excessively opposing Chu Mo was a very stupid move.

Xia Xiong even regretted suggesting Xia Ying marry Miao Yiniang. Otherwise, the crown prince wouldn't go so far as to abhor Chu Mo.

“What, you don’t approve of my opinion?” Seeing Xia Xiong’s long silence, Xia Ying’s eyes turned a little red. A shady color flashed across his eyes, and he coldly stared at Xia Xiong.

Xia Xiong was slightly shocked, and he immediately said: “I approve. Of course I approve. Chu Mo.....really must die!”

“You also believe this way? This little animal is true evil! He absolutely cannot remain!” Xia Ying was satisfied with his little brother’s attitude. He gritted his teeth and said: “The whereabouts of his master are unknown. I investigated. He hasn’t been in Yellow Flame City recently. How could such a cultivator reside in the secular world for so long? So long as we think of a surefire plan, one that is completely watertight.....then, we will certainly succeed!”

Xia Xiong nodded and said: “The Misty Palace Royal Academy still needs to be founded. Miao Yiniang has already left, and so, those heritages are most likely being carried by Chu Mo. Since brother wants him dead, it would be better to ask father’s help.”

“Ask father’s help?” Uncertainty flashed across Xia Ying’s pupils.

Xia Xiong said: “Right, go talk openly with father. Say you cannot live under the same sky as Chu Mo. He is a thorn in your heart, embarrassing you several times. Now Chu Mo actually instigated Miao Yiniang’s escape from her future marriage, and he used princess Chen Xingxue’s debt.....such an outlaw, doesn’t deserve to continue living.”

“These words.....will work?” Xia Ying hesitantly looked at Xia Xiong.

Xia Xiong nodded: “They will certainly work. You are Da Xia’s crown prince after all. If you completely lack face.....then it’s not just you! Doesn’t that reflect upon the emperor’s face as well? So long as you openly share your state of mind with father, and show you don’t covet the throne at all. I believe, father he.....will understand.”

“Yes, what you say is logical. Father worries most about my schemes. I only need to close up all my schemes, and then beg to father, and say I’ve been repeatedly humiliated by Chu Mo. Now he actually cheated away my future wife.....I believe, father should also be extremely furious!” Xia Ying’s eyes lit up the more he spoke, and became more excited.

Xia Xiong stood to the side, sighing to himself: ‘Brother, if this really succeeds.....and father promises you to take out Chu Mo, then, your position will be completely secured!’

‘But if this doesn’t succeed, then I’m afraid your seat as crown prince is in jeopardy!’

‘In my opinion, the odds of this not succeeding are nine times out of ten!’

‘I’m sorry, it’s not that I wish to harm my brother, actually.....the current you is no longer fit to rule!’

Xia Ying couldn't see this at all. In his opinion, no matter what was said, the emperor was his father! What father doesn't love his son? Only Xia Ying forgot one thing. The royal family.....were they truly that affectionate?

If they were truly affectionate, would he scheme against his own little sister?

Xia Ying himself was heartless, yet he actually expected to find a heart in others.

Would he truly find it?

Xia Ying hurriedly left towards the royal palace. He wanted to go complain tearfully!

The emperor was also thundering at this time in the royal palace.

“Good Chen Xingxue.....you actually have the face to return? You actually did such a thing as my daughter! You you you.....truly anger me to death! You still take me for your father?” The emperor was furious like a dragon, and glowered at the delicate girl before himself.

A faint mist covered the delicate girl's eyes, showing she felt wronged. This girl was precisely the Chen Xingxue who had completely disappeared.

An extremely good looking woman stood beside Chen Xingxue.

This woman looked like she was in her twenties. She was young and beautiful, with amazing skin. She had an oval shaped face, and her skin was tender like a freshly peeled egg.

When carefully paying observing, this woman looked a lot like Chen Xingxue.

When she heard the emperor curse at Chen Xingxue, the woman quietly opened her mouth: “I let my sister’s daughter return to give you recognition, not to let you curse her. You don’t have the qualifications to curse her! Incapable ruler, if you’re tired of living, I don’t mind killing a secular world emperor. I will take elder sister’s revenge.”

Chapter 137: Crown Prince's Early Fall

No one would believe unless they saw it with their own eyes. A person actually dared stand in the royal palace and threaten the emperor.

But the unexpected thing was, the emperor with a right to be furious, he actually didn't say a word, despite a very red swollen face, and veins bulging on his forehead.

Humph!

A cold snort instantly came from the depths of the royal palace: "Flying Immortal's leader.....can actually be so lawless? The old and useless 'Lonely City One Sword, Beyond Heaven Flying Immortal' has long been admired. Now seeing a person from Flying Immortal, I'm itching to see some skill. Maybe you can give a demonstration?"

The chilly woman coldly snorted: "A demonstration? You don't deserve one! I've never given demonstrations, only killed!"

"So arrogant!" An angry old voice transferred from the depths of the royal palace.

Soon after, a gust of wind suddenly blew into the room, directly towards the woman standing there.

The wind was invisible, but this gust of wind gave off a sensation—it was like a sharp sword!

It spread an incredibly powerful murderous intent!

Ice-cold, and fierce!

“With such little ability, you have the nerve to give a display?” The woman coldly spoke, and then casually waved a hand.

The room immediately went cold. It was like an icy wind blew past, resuming everything to normal.

But a stuffy groan suddenly came from the inner palace depths. It was obviously the sound of pain being suppressed, but the sound still transferred over.

“There’s a lesson, dare step out of place again, and I’ll instantly kill you!” As she coldly spoke, the woman’s eyes flickered with extremely ice-cold rays of light.

Finished speaking, she looked over at the pale emperor, and couldn’t help but coldly snort: “Your greatest fortune is being Chen Xingxue’s father! Otherwise, I would have killed a degenerate like you long ago!”

“Auntie.....” Chen Xingxue somewhat resentfully walked over,

and pulled the woman's shaking arm.

“Okay okay, what's the point in protecting such low scum?” The woman glanced a little furiously at Chen Xingxue, and then she said: “Let's go!”

She glanced to the emperor, and plainly said: “Remember, from today on, Miao Yiniang is the disciple of me, Chen Ao'bing. If you dare have any motives against her, I will certainly kill you! As someone named Xia, you should know. If I want to kill you, then there is no one in this world who can save you!”

She didn't looked at the emperor again after she finished speaking. She pulled on Chen Xingxue, and her figure flashed, instantly disappearing from the room.

Soon after, a cold snort suddenly came from the sky outside: “Scum like you is fit to marry my disciple?”

“Auntie don't.....” The panicked voice of Chen Xingxue soon followed.

“This person is scum. You still don't know? That thing half a year ago was due to him plotting against you! Before my Intent of Heaven, his malice towards you shows like a lamp in the dead of night! He's less than the pigs and dogs, a beast plotting against his own sister. Why are you protecting him?” The clear cold voice spread farther and father, practically reaching the entire royal city.

It shocked countless people!

“Ah!”

A miserable scream abruptly came from outside at this time.

The emperor turned pale with fright, because the miserable scream came from the crown prince Xia Ying.

Boom!

The emperor pushed open the door and rushed out. The scene ahead made his eye sockets want to break open. He roared to the heavens.

The crown prince Xia Ying was a mess. His eyes were turned into two bloody holes, with blood bubbling down.

Whoosh!

A figure suddenly appeared beside the emperor. It was the old eunuch.

The old eunuch's eyes were violently shaking. The words that were at the edge of his mouth were forcefully swallowed back.

He originally wanted to say: He suffered a heavy injury, and

needed at least three years of seclusion to recover. But looking at the scene, he didn't dare say anything. Because he feared the emperor would collapse as soon as he spoke.

A large amount of palace guards rushed over at this time.

Upon seeing this, the old eunuch thundered loudly: "Everyone withdraw!"

The crown prince's two eyes were destroyed. This matter..... absolutely couldn't spread right now.

Xia Ying was in so much pain that he was about to faint, and he was constantly wailing.

The emperor swayed back and forth, almost fainting himself. He looked ghastly. And his mind was practically a blank space!

At this moment, he was truly aware. He now knew what the strongest sect signified to the secular world!

The people in the secular world completely fear secular world royal authority. In the eyes of royalty, they are no different than ants!

To be extinguished, a thought was enough.

"I.....hate!" The emperor gnashed his teeth, and spoke these two

words. Then, a mouthful of blood sprayed out.

.....

The crown prince of the grand Da Xia empire was completely blinded.

The royal family sealed off everything at the first instant, but where was there a wall that gossip cannot pass through?

With all the things combined.....the sudden ice-cold voice of the woman, the crown prince's following scream, his majesty the emperor howling into the sky, and the eunuch's command to 'withdraw'.....people could guess for the most part.

Not to mention the people who witnessed the crown prince with two bloody eye-sockets, and it wasn't just one or two witnesses.

A command soon followed after, but before this, some information already spread.

The royal palace interior was within other people's eye line after all.

Because of this, the news rapidly spread through a small majority of people in Yellow Flame City. Only this small majority all upheld

a bottom line. That was: Don't let this news spread to the people.

Actually, this was also the emperor's bottom line!

The crown prince had an extremely high reputation among the common people. How could they comprehend the struggles at the upper levels? Therefore, not only would the crown prince's reputation suffer a heavy blow once the news spread, but the royal family reputation would also suffer a heavy blow!

A nation's crown prince was blinded by someone within the royal palace, wasn't it terrible?

If the royal palace wasn't safe, then where was it safe in Da Xia?

Although there weren't many people qualified to know the news, and their statuses could be considered the highest in all of Da Xia, but each person harbored their own thoughts.

A blind crown prince, even though he had a high reputation among the people, and no matter how capable, he absolutely cannot become a ruler!

So, the crown prince.....must be changed!

And so, switch to who?

No matter if it was Marshal Fang Mingtong's household or Grand

Secretary Xu Zhongliang's household, everyone received mysterious visitors that wore out the threshold.

Beneath the peace and security of Yellow Flame City, an undercurrent was bubbling up.

Xu Fufu once again came to Chu Mo's household after all was said and done.

The two brothers were both silent.

Xu Fufu finally said after a long time: "That day....."

Chu Mo waved his hand: "You have been my brother for so many years. We don't need to speak about the past."

Xu Fufu said: "Mistakes are mistakes. This is the truth my grandfather taught me. The anger with you that day, it was really my fault. I thought about it later on. The main reason lies in my ability to resist pressure.....and not your power."

"The matter is already past, and big sister Yiniang is already safe. Don't mention this matter again." Chu Mo laughed.

Xu Fufu looked at Chu Mo, and then slightly raised an eyebrow: "You haven't come outside the last two days?"

Chu Mo nodded.

Xu Fufu said a little startled: “Don’t tell me, the rumor spreading outside, you don’t know a thing! Our intelligence gathering ability isn’t that strong, but it’s already been put into motion!”

“Are you talking about the crown prince?” Chu Mo laughed: “I knew before you.”

Chapter 138: I Am Chu Mo

Xu Fufu curled his lips, looked with disbelief at Chu Mo, and then scoffed: “Little black brother, confidence is a good thing, but too much confidence easily becomes a joke. The intelligence network is managed by your family’s Chu Yan, but all of the information first gathers to me!”

Chu Mo looked at Xu Fufu: “I have additional information channels.”

Xu Fufu didn’t look convinced: “Did someone inside the royal palace give you information? How is it possible?”

Chu Mo wryly smiled. He recollected the woman who suddenly appeared before his eyes that day.

He didn’t know that woman at all, but he recognized Chen Xingxue at her side. Therefore, he could guess the woman’s background in the first moment.

A Flying Immortal member!

A member of the legendary hidden sect that never entered the secular world, just like that, all of the sudden.....appeared before him, but it wasn’t especially unexpected to Chu Mo.

“You are Chu Mo?” The woman was very young. At the very least, she looked very young.

She appeared in her twenties. Her skin had a snow white glow, and she was very beautiful. Only her appearance was ice-cold, like someone owed her a lot of money, making Chu Mo a little uncomfortable.

“Yes, I am Chu Mo.” Chu Mo nodded.

“Two things, first, Chen Xingxue is my niece. You saved her that day, so I must show thanks.” As she spoke, the woman pulled out a pill bottle, and she placed it before Chu Mo: “The pills in here can make you climb the heavens in one step! You can directly enter the golden stone realm! This should be enough to repay your kindness to Xingxue!”

Chu Mo was a little stunned. From the side, Chen Xingxue was also a little stunned.

Coming back to his senses, Chu Mo expressionlessly looked at the ice-cold woman: “When I saved her that day, I didn’t know her status at all. Don’t mention the status of a Flying Immortal disciple, I didn’t even know she was a royal family princess. Therefore, I never expected anything in return.”

“Don’t display your virtues and arrogance before me. I can see everything clearly in your heart.” The ice-cold woman somewhat disdainfully looked at Chu Mo, and simply said: “It doesn’t suit you, don’t go asking for more, people shouldn’t be too greedy. I wish to speak a few words with you because you rescued Xingxue.”

Chu Mo was angered to the extreme, yet he smiled, waved his hand, and said: “You are too noble and magnificent. A boy like me cannot climb so high, please hurry, go where you need to go. I’m sorry I can’t see you further!”

“Right, you can take your godly pills that can make a person climb the heavens.....take it and leave. I don’t need it.” Chu Mo plainly said.

“Still have a temper? If you don’t want it, then just say you don’t want it. Do you think I really want to give it to you?” The ice-cold woman waved a hand, and the pill bottle on the table disappeared. With an icy glare, she attentively watched Chu Mo: “Thanks are over. Now I want to talk about the second matter.”

Chu Mo looked at the ice-cold woman, and slightly wrinkled his brow: “Please don’t use this manner of tone to speak to me. You might feel like I am an ant, with no qualifications to speak with you, but you must remember, I don’t owe you anything!”

The icy woman was slightly stunned. She had probably never been spoken to this way. That ice-cold face was slightly dull for a moment. Then she arched an eyebrow, and coldly said: “You want me to tenderly speak with you? You’re right. You really don’t have the qualifications.”

Chu Mo became even more disgusted with the woman, and directly said: “Fine fine, I already know what you want to say. You want me to stay away from Chen Xingxue right? A toad shouldn’t attempt to eat a swan, am I right? I promise you, I will stay far away from her. Quickly disappear from my eyes. You aren’t

welcome here.”

Chen Xingxue held a difficult expression, and she was trying to find an opportunity to insert herself into the conversation. After hearing these words, her graceful face immediately became pale. She bit her lower lip, and her eyes became covered with a layer of mist, showing her heavy heart.

The ice-cold woman satisfactorily nodded. In her eyes, Chu Mo was an ant.

Should she care about an ant’s emotions?

“Another thing, after this talk I will leave right away. Don’t believe that I enjoy dealing with you here.” The ice-cold woman looked at Chu Mo: “It doesn’t matter if it is Chen Xingxue or Miao Yiniang. The difference between you and them is the gap between heaven and earth! You not only have to stay away from Chen Xingxue, but Miao Yiniang is also the same! I understand that you and Miao Yiniang had a certain crossing, but that is the past! The secular world Miao Yiniang could be your friend, but the Flying Immortal Miao Yiniang isn’t suited to speak with you. Do you understand?”

Chu Mo’s heart suddenly burned with surging fury. His thoughts returned to the experience at Immortal Sky.

And so, Chu Mo began to smile, seeming like he was very happy.

The depressed Chen Xingxue couldn't help but look confused at Chu Mo. She didn't know why he was smiling.

The chilly woman looked at Chu Mo, and expressionlessly spoke: "Is this funny?"

"Scram!" The smiling Chu Mo suddenly roared.

Chen Xingxue was so scared that she started to tremble. Even the ice-cold woman Chen Ao'bing was stunned a moment, and she somewhat perplexingly looked at Chu Mo.

"Do you not understand words? Or, are you and I two different races?" An extremely chilly light flashed across Chu Mo's eyes. He icily focused on the heartless Chen Ao'bing: "I told you to scram. Did you not hear? Do I need to repeat myself?"

"You.....are scolding me?" Chen Ao'bing was truly a little stupefied. She stared dumbstruck at Chu Mo.

Has anyone ever dared treat her this way?

She didn't even place Da Xia's emperor in her eyes at all, saying she would kill him to his face.

And now a teenager actually dared use this attitude with her..... no, he was scolding her!

“Have you never been scolded?” Chu Mo icily looked at Chen Ao’bing: “Is there any relation between you and I? Who do you think you are? A god looking down from on high? Don’t mention Chen Xingxue. Treat me as if I never rescued her, and never even met her.”

“But how is my relationship with Miao Yiniang any of your business? What exactly are you thinking? You grab a bottle of junk pills and dare show off before me? Are you blind or stupid? Haven’t you seen Miao Yiniang’s realm? Are you retarded? Did you ever think about how Miao Yiniang entered the golden stone realm? If Misty Palace had such pills, would she have waited so many years to use it?” With cold clear eyes, Chu Mo angrily stared at Chen Ao’bing.

“You.....” Chen Ao’bing naturally knew Miao Yiniang’s realm, but she never thought her realm had anything to do with the secular world teenager Chu Mo.

In her thinking, Miao Yiniang’s current realm was due to golden stone pills leftover from the Misty Palace heritage. There wasn’t a second explanation apart from this.

Very few people knew Flying Immortal was actually a master pill cultivation sect. Because of this, Chen Ao’bing couldn’t believe that a secular world teenager like Chu Mo could refine any pills. Were the specifics of pill and drug refinement unclear to someone like her?

“Who are you? Are you so arrogant because you are a Flying Immortal member? Or is it because of your intent of heaven realm

power? I really don't know if you are ignorant or arrogant." Chu Mo coldly looked at Chen Ao'bing: "Have you broken [through the innate](#)? Wait until you break through the innate, and then you can talk about secular world people as ants!"

[TL: The realms after golden stone (6th realm) are understanding intent (7th realm) -> comprehending intent (8th realm) -> intent of heaven (9th realm). The innate is the realm at which a person smashes through the void and can enter the Spirit World.]

"And who are you?" Chen Ao'bing stared shocked at Chu Mo. Someone able to speak like this.....was absolutely not a person of the secular world: "How do you know I am at the Intent of Heaven realm?"

But Chu Mo only icily stared at Chen Ao'bing, and spoke with a self-deprecating smile: "I am Chu Mo! The secular world teenager you completely don't place in your eyes! Nothing more."

Chapter 139: Grandmaster

“That’s not possible!” Chen Ao’bing’s seemingly expressionless ice-cold face couldn’t help but reveal a trace of anger. She heatedly said: “You think I’ve never seen secular world people? I just destroyed your dog crown prince’s eyes within the royal palace. And I ruthlessly taught your dog emperor a lesson. They are people of the secular world!”

“I am also.” Chu Mo was a little stunned inside, but his face remained calm as he attentively watched Chen Ao’bing: “But you cannot provoke me.”

If he said these words upon first meeting, Chen Ao’bing would certainly scoff, and be in complete disdain. But these words coming out of Chu Mo now, they yet made Chen Ao’bing have a terrified sensation.

Like he wasn’t bragging at all, but rather expounding the facts!

But.....how was this possible?

Chen Ao’bing was baffled, and she couldn’t help but cast a glance at Chen Xingxue. At the same time, there was a little regret inside. She was a little careless, and didn’t investigate Chu Mo’s background in the slightest.

Chen Xingxue nibbled her lower lip, and she said with hesitation: “Noble son Chu.....is very amazing. The pills Yiniang used must have been made by noble son Chu. He, he also cured my uncle Xia

Jing's illness.....the one I told you about.”

Chen Xingxue's face turned a little red, and she spoke softly.

“What?” Chen Ao'bing was truly a little surprised. She looked at that dark face of Chu Mo. Her heart couldn't help but churn, and she thought: 'If Xingxue is telling the truth, then the support behind that teenager.....I'm afraid it should be no inferior to myself.....no, after hearing his words, it seems to be an existence that can completely crush me! Could they be.....innate?'

Chen Ao'bing scared herself back as step from this guess. The more power increases, the greater the awe towards the higher realm. Only those who are close can truly understand how amazing the people at a higher realm were!

No wonder my words caused such a large response from this teenager.....Chen Ao'bing deeply looked at Chu Mo. Although she knew that she could have offended the teenager with a terrifying background, but she, Chen Ao'bing, absolutely couldn't open her mouth and apologise.

Because of this, Chen Ao'bing pulled on Chen Xingxue. Their figures flashed, and they disappeared from Chu Mo's room.

As soon as they left, Chu Mo slammed back into a chair, and then he started gasping for air. That ice-cold woman genuinely gave him incredible pressure!

If it wasn't for the jade at his chest, transmitting a portion of energy to support him, he wouldn't have had the ability to scold that arrogant unreasonable woman, even though he had the courage!

A rank nine.....intent of heaven realm grandmaster!

Chu Mo had never seen such a powerful person, well of course, except for the Demon Lord. But the Demon Lord was his master, and he wouldn't put such imposing pressure towards Chu Mo.

“This woman like ice.....is truly terrifying.” Chu Mo couldn't help but mumble. Don't look at how incredibly tough he was when facing Chen Ao'bing. In the depths of his heart, it was yet very clear. If that woman really acted against him, he wouldn't have had any ability to resist.

The jade he carried was magical, and Murdering Heaven was indeed sharp.....able to cut through any weapon in the world, but he himself.....wasn't that strong in the end.

His attitude was tough, indeed having an unyielding and spirited dignity. But he was still aware of his limits.

Therefore not even the powerful Chen Ao'bing sensed, from beginning to end, how Chu Mo controlled the entire scene.

Now Chu Mo recollected the events of that day, and he couldn't help but have a little fear.

That woman dared to injure the crown prince, and even cursed the emperor. There didn't seem to be anything that she couldn't do.

Xu Fufu looked shocked at Chu Mo: "You're saying, there is a sect even greater than the Immortal Sky in this world? Then, a cultivator from that sect appeared before you, and you cursed her out?"

Chu Mo nodded: "That was really the outcome."

"Little black brother, you are amazing! I'm convinced." After Xu Fufu heard Chu Mo narrate about that icy woman, he was scared into a cold sweat.

He knew that Chu Mo wouldn't deceive him, and when Chu Mo said these things, it completely matched up with the rumors, convincing Xu Fufu even more.

Chu Mo shook his head and smiled: "What about me is amazing? I relied on two points. The first was saving Chen Xingxue's life. The woman is incredibly tough, but she isn't the kind of vile person that kills the innocent. The second was my master made her a little afraid. As for me.....she can kill me with a thought."

"Now matter what is said, you scared away a worldwide top level cultivator. You should be proud" Xu Fufu enviously spoke.

“The crown prince is crippled.” Xu Fufu then said to Chu Mo: “Several people have been secretly visiting my grandfather recently. The doorstep is going to collapse soon.”

“This has nothing to do with me. Don’t go mixing in.” Chu Mo looked at Xufufu, and then he said: “I should leave soon.”

“Enter the military?” Xu Fufu asked.

Chu Mo nodded: “Exactly.”

“With the emperor being like this.....you still want to enter the military?” The marriage granting of Miao Yiniang to the crown prince had already passed, but Xu Fufu’s resentment towards the emperor hadn’t passed in the slightest.

Chu Mo laughed: “This has nothing to do with the emperor!”

Xu Fufu didn’t know. Chu Mo wanted to enter the military so that he serve the nation. Another aspect, was the [bloody spirit aura](#)!

[TL: The bloody spirit aura comes from the traces of blood that enters the jade space when he kills, creating the small blood-colored mark on the green stone in the jade space. Chapter 53 is a good reference.]

These two goals weren’t in conflict.

The best place to obtain a large amount of bloody spirit aura, was on the battlefield!

The more enemies that he killed on the battlefield, the greater the bloody spirit aura would become. As far as Da Xia, the more enemies Chu Mo killed, the more his people could live in safety.

Xu Fufu looked at Chu Mo: “Good, I will support you in any case. Don’t worry, I can take care of things in Yellow Flame City. I will make certain your house looks good.”

Chu Mo looked at Xu Fufu, and he pulled a pill bottle from his chest: “You should know about Yiniang, one-armed uncle, as well as Chu Yan. [This is the last remaining bottle of pills](#). It can make you increase to the golden stone realm! Xia Jing purchased the materials. The amount of resources used is hard to even imagine. Therefore, the materials might not appear again for several more years. To get this kind of medicine in the secular world again, in a short period of time, is an impossibility.”

“This.....” Xu Fufu looked at Chu Mo. He didn’t want to be so polite to Chu Mo, but this thing.....was too precious!

“Take it. You are my best brother. There’s no reason to refuse.” Chu Mo said.

“Good, I won’t be so polite.” Xu Fu took the pill bottle, carefully placed it inside his robes, and then took his leave.

With Xu Fufu's current realm, he probably only needed two months time, and then he could fully digest the pill's energy. To fully possess the golden stone realm's combat power, it was entirely possible within a few years! He only needed a large amount of battle experience to hone his skills.

But as for Xu Fufu, stepping into the unimaginable golden stone realm was already a gift from heaven!

No, not a gift from heaven, but rather a gift from a brother.

Right after Xu Fufu departed, the second prince Xia Xiong made a low-key visit.

This slightly cold early spring was extremely chaotic.

[TL: Chu Mo indeed said it was the last batch when he gave golden-stone pills to one-armed uncle in chapter 119. I don't know if one-armed uncle actually did refuse in the end, or if Chu Mo made another set of pills without the author telling us.]

Chapter 140: Xia Xiong's Thinking

Xia Xiong's reason for coming was very simple. It was to show good intentions, and to give an apology.

“Several things of the past are from my scheming. In fact, it has little to do with the crown prince.” Xia Xiong calmly admitted several things that were plotted against Chu Mo over the last year.

Chu Mo silently watched Xia Xiong. He actually didn't want to look at the second prince at all. Because he felt there was nothing good to say with Xia Xiong. The grudges between both sides weren't deep like the ocean, but it wasn't something that could be resolved in one or two days.

The scheme half a year ago was Xia Jing's doing, but from that point onward, ever since Chu Mo came back, the princes had acted against him several times, trying to take his life. Even someone with a good temper would be infuriated. Don't even mention how Chu Mo's temper wasn't all that good.

“I have come this time, mainly to give noble son Chu an apology. The past events were really my fault. My presence here is a symbol. I wish to make amends with noble son Chu.” Xia Xiong pulled out a bank note as he spoke, and he placed it on the table.

Chu Mo swept a glance, then plainly said: “Ten million silver liang, your majesty is truly generous.”

“I know, this isn't enough at all to show my apology to noble son

Chu. This.....is only a small token. As far as later on.....I believe noble son Chu will see even more of my sincerity.” Xia Xiong said to Chu Mo.

Chu Mo thought a moment, and then said: “Since the beginning, I never aimed at your royal family.”

Xia Xiong nodded: “Yes, it was always us attacking noble son Chu.”

“And now with what’s happened to your elder brother, will you become the crown prince?” Chu Mo bluntly asked.

Xia Xiong didn’t deny, and he smiled at Chu Mo: “What does noble son Chu think?”

“This is your royal family’s business. This has nothing to do with a teenager like me.” Chu Mo looked at Xia Xiong, and then he said: “I already clearly see why you came. I won’t do anything to affect the seat of the crown prince. I don’t have that kind of influential power.”

“Noble son Chu is modest, you do.” Xia Xiong wryly smiled. Chu Mo was just a teenager, and yet he was already a crafty schemer. Not only was he in the Grand Secretary’s good graces, but even the military Marshal insisted on recruiting Chu Mo under his banner.

And don’t even mention the emperor, he always favored Chu Mo!

Although the marriage grant of Miao Yiniang was a twist, the attitude towards Chu Mo never changed.

It wouldn't be impossible for him to influence the court politics of Da Xia.

Chu Mo looked at Xia Xiong: "Even if I have the influence, I wouldn't act. I already said, this is the royal family's business. I won't go spoiling your matters. But I hope you keep your promise. Do not come provoking me later!"

Xia Xiong came here today, to actually hear these words from Chu Mo. He didn't actually believe his visit today, and the shockingly large bank note, would actually cause the other party to turn spears into jade and silk. Xia Xiong would be even more untrusting if that were the case.

So long as Chu Mo didn't interfere, then, Xia Xiong was more than capable of struggling for the crown prince's seat.

This absolutely brilliant prince could no longer stand idle after all these years. He must step out from behind the curtain, and enter on to the stage.

After Xia Xiong departed, Chu Mo went alone to his room, and he meditated for a long time.

In the end, the teenager revealed a trace of a smile, and he mumbled: "I have no interest in your competitions. There are only

three things that I wish to do now! First, help master gather the medicine ingredients, and help him return earlier, so his wife can be rescued from the ocean of misery. Second, continually improve myself. I must struggle and use the shortest time possible to reach the innate realm. Then I will smash through the void and enter the Spirit World. Xiaoyu, you must wait for me. Third, during this process, I must help grandfather improve ranks. I must help the old man live well in his later years after I leave.”

Therefore, although there were many things going on during this chaotic time, Chu Mo didn’t get involved. Chu Mo only needed to constantly work hard, and realize each one of his goals. That was enough.

The founding site of the Misty Palace Royal Academy was already chosen a long time ago. It was in the Yellow Flame City center, just west of the royal city. The site spread over several acres. It was originally an enormous royal family garden. The location was only separated from the royal city by a high wall!

The emperor selected the location at a great pain. He originally didn’t want to part with the garden, but he chose this place to carry out the large scale construction of the Misty Palace Royal Academy in the end.

He pushed forward the progress using the nation’s power, which was at an astonishing degree.

By using not even a month’s time, the Misty Palace Royal academy was already completely constructed!

Apart from taking a Yuan beast blood bath every ten days, practically all of Chu Mo's other time was spent at the Misty Palace Royal Academy. He was personally giving direction on a few matters.

Although Miao Yiniang left, the academy embodied all the desires of Miao Yiniang!

Chu Mo didn't want Miao Yiniang to lose hope. No matter what, the words Misty Palace would be restored in the world.....and the words would ring clear!

Chu Yan started personally to manage the intelligence organization's ability.

According to the secret reports, several people of unknown origin started to appear in Yellow Flame City recently. The intelligence officers were able to combine information from their clothes and accents to reach a decision. These people were likely from the Vermilion Bird continent.

This information gave Chu Mo a slight headache.

He could approximately guess the status of these people, as well as their goals. Miao Yiniang already left, but this group of people rushed here for the heritage. Once the Misty Palace Royal Academy started, there was no way to keep the news of the heritage a secret.

Therefore, taking out the entire group of people wasn't so simple.

“If I knew early that Miao Yiniang could have entered the Flying Immortal, then I wouldn't have had to make a bullshit academy.” Chu Mo couldn't help but mumble. But considering that restoring Misty Palace was Miao Yiniang's greatest desire.....there was nothing he could grumble about.

Chu Mo took the time to visit the Prince Mansion and meet with Mister Wei Chi there. He then entered the royal palace afterwards, and met with the old eunuch.

No one knew that Chu Mo talked with them, but ultimately, Mister Wei Chi and the old eunuch would become the Misty Palace Royal Academy associate deans.

When Chu Mo entered the Royal Palace, and just finished talking with the old eunuch, the emperor unexpectedly appeared.

The somewhat haggard emperor cheerfully spoke with Chu Mo: “There is a particular person in the palace.....that wants to meet you.”

Chu Mo felt a little odd. He looked at the emperor, and then looked at the old eunuch.

The old eunuch said in a low voice: “It's an almighty understanding intent realm cultivator that has entered the intent

refinement stage. When.....the crown prince was injured, this senior also suffered an injury. I hope noble son Chu can take a look.”

An understanding intent realm almighty!

Chu Mo slightly squinted his eyes, and he thought: “If I can bring this level of person into the Misty Palace Royal Academy, then wouldn’t it be even more stable?

Chu Mo nodded soon after: “Good, take me to look at this senior.”

The emperor finally revealed a trace of happiness, and he personally led Chu Mo into an underground path.

The emperor seemed to casually ask without thinking: “Chu Mo, who do you think.....is most suited to be crown prince?”

Chapter 141: Emperor's Request

Chu Mo speechlessly cast a glance at the emperor. His mouth twitched, and he said: "Chen Xingxue."

"Troublemaker!" The emperor knew Chu Mo was being sarcastic. He couldn't help but sigh: "Da Xia has existed for over a thousand years, all the way until my generation. The sects are overpowering. This point I know clearly, and my ancestors were well aware a long time ago. Therefore, we've always maintained close ties with the sects, but we have also always been secretly alert."

"But I never thought the sect members would be absolutely unrestrained!" A trace of fury swept past the emperor's eyes. There was also faint remorse at the same time. He didn't know that unrestrained sect member also met with Chu Mo. He especially didn't know that the reckless and unrestrained woman was cursed away by Chu Mo.

Chu Mo maintained silence when faced with the emperor's grumbles. He had absolutely no interest in participating in the royal family affairs.

"I also know that Xia Xiong sought you out." The emperor suddenly spoke.

Chu Mo was a little shocked, but he soon smiled: "The emperor is wise!"

"What wisdom? Wise enough for my son's cleverness?" The

emperor gave a self-deprecating smile. Then he immediately said: “Actually, I always knew Xia Xiong was smarter than Xia Ying!”

Chu Mo nodded.

The emperor stopped walking, and he looked at Chu Mo: “But I.....don’t want him to be the crown prince!”

Chu Mo’s mouth twitched: “I am young and don’t understand anything. Should your majesty be talking about this with me?”

“Then who should I talk with?” A loneliness flashed across the emperor’s eyes. He quietly said: “Should I talk to Grand Secretary Xu? Or maybe Marshal Fang? Or maybe.....the ministers of the court?”

“Whoever your majesty selects as the crown prince, that is a private matter of the royal family.....” Chu Mo said.

“You’re wrong. This is no private matter. It involves all of Da Xia!” The emperor interrupted Chu Mo, and spoke with a sigh.

“This tone.....isn’t it the way the court ministers talk?” Chu Mo uncertainly glanced at the emperor.

The emperor couldn’t help but laugh in spite of himself: “You little devil.....still say you don’t understand anything because of your age? You’re right. Establishing the crown prince does seem to be a private affair of the royal family, but the court ministers

aren't wrong either. The selection really does involve the future of Da Xia. Xia Xiong is intelligent and wise enough. He is also low-key and patient. After all these years, I've never gotten the feeling that he had any intentions towards the position. He has always been hiding behind Xia Ying. There are very few people who even know of his intelligence. Even fewer know that Xia Ying's high reputation among the people is mostly do to Xia Xiong's contributions."

Chu Mo maintained silence. But he was actually thinking: 'Since this is the case, why doesn't your majesty want him as crown prince? Don't tell me Xia Ying can continue being the crown prince?'

This was a possibility, but it was very small. Even though the emperor felt this way, it didn't mean that everyone below would agree to let a crippled person become their ruler. This was a big bad omen in itself!

"But, he lacks the presence of a ruler." The emperor didn't wait for Chu Mo to ask, taking the initiative to explain: "Xia Ying has this quality, but Xia Xiong.....perhaps he had it originally, but now it's already gone."

Chu Mo was silent. The emperor actually spoke the truth. Xia Xiong actually did hide behind Xia Ying for a little too long.

"Back when I was crown prince. Xia Jing.....he always hid behind me, and he helped me manage all kinds of thorny situations. He gave me lots of advice, and he frequently warned me about things that I never even thought about." The emperor

seemed to be reminiscing. Then he softly said: “And so, several people said that we were inseparable brothers, which was a rare sight among royalty. People now say that Xia Ying and Xia Xiong are exactly like Xia Jing and me.”

The emperor revealed a complicated expression: “Actually, my luck was merely.....greater than Xia Ying’s! I never encountered this kind of situation when I was crown prince.”

Chu Mo looked at the emperor. Chu Mo could see from the emperor’s expression that was mixed with sorrow and rage, the emperor hated that Flying Immortal woman to the core of his bones. At the same time, he was extremely heartbroken over Xia Ying’s misfortune!

It could be said that the emperor was oppressive to Xia Ying before his misfortune. But that was just a father’s warning to his son. The emperor never once thought about changing the seat of crown prince!

Xia Xiong ah.....was too smart for his own good!

Chu Mo thought: ‘If Xia Xiong didn’t act so urgently, or if he honestly showed consideration towards Xia Ying, then.....the outcome would likely be different.’

The emperor sighed, then spoke: “Chu Mo, I know you have an incredibly powerful master supporting you. I also know you have unlimited potential. I.....want you to help with something.”

“Your majesty doesn’t need to be so polite. Please clearly state the problem.” Chu Mo said.

“Good, I want to ask you, if you can become a legendary innate realm cultivator one day, please make Da Xia prosper.” The emperor spoke, and then suddenly stooped to give Chu Mo a bow.

Chu Mo was scared a step back. He hurriedly returned a bow: “Your majesty, a boy like me doesn’t deserve such respect. When that day really comes, I will certainly shelter Da Xia. After all, this is my motherland. However, doesn’t your majesty already know? Once a person reaches the innate realm, they must break through the void, and then leave this world.”

The emperor nodded: “I know, but an innate almighty can do several things right before leaving.” The emperor’s eyes flashed with ice-cold murderous intent. He didn’t continue speaking, but Chu Mo understood.

It seemed like Xia Ying’s misfortune changed his majesty’s thoughts. The emperor completely hated these mighty sects to the core.

Chu Mo was silent a moment, and then he said: “This matter..... there will truly be a day, I’m convinced that I will have a way to resolve it.”

The emperor nodded, and then laughed: “Then I will take that as a promise! You can rest at ease. All of the things involving you and your people, I won’t interfere from today on!”

The emperor never mentioned the matter involving Miao Yiniang, but these words were almost the same as a ruler apologising to Chu Mo!

Chu Mo looked at the emperor, nodded, and then said: “Let’s go see that senior.”

The emperor’s expression became a little serious. He quietly said: “Senior Tan Tai’s wound..... is a little serious. If you can cure it, no matter what medicine is needed, I.....will pay any price!

Chu Mo nodded: “Don’t worry your majesty.”

Soon after, they continued walking down a long path. And then, an enormous stone door blocked the way.

Chapter 142: Mister Tan Tai

The emperor reached out, and he softly pushed on a lower area of the stone door.

Chu Mo felt a slight vibration below his feet. Soon after, there was a deep and low rumble, and the thick heavy stone door started to slowly open.

Chu Mo was a little stunned. An understanding intent expert was a little weak in comparison to the rank nine intent of heaven cultivator from flying immortal, but in the secular world.....they were already existences without equal. Why would they need to hide in such a place?

The emperor seemed to sense Chu Mo's uncertainty. He took the initiative and said: "The crown prince wasn't the only injury. Senior Tan Tai has been in seclusion this whole time. This has been the place of refuge for successive generations of Da Xia Royalty.

Chu Mo suddenly realized.

As a royal family refuge, this place made complete sense.

After all, because successive generations of emperors used all kinds of pills, their life span was very long. However, there were very few emperors with powerful combat abilities. In the entire history of Da Xia, the number of emperors with rank five power to kill a thousand men could be counted on one hand.

A nation's ruler was not a general on the battlefield after all.

Three passages appeared ahead after the stone door opened. The emperor brought Chu Mo to the left passage, and they continued on inside. Another stone door blocked the way after walking for a moment, and there were another two paths after the door opened.

The two continued on deeper and deeper in this fashion. Chu Mo felt like he would soon leave Yellow Flame City after about ten doors.....the emperor at last said to Chu Mo when they reached another stone door: "Arrived!"

Then he yelled: "Mister Tan Tai, I have brought Chu Mo for you."

The emperor's manner of speaking was extremely respectful. It gave Chu Mo the feeling of a disciple towards his master.

An old hoarse voice came from inside: "Come right in."

Chu Mo peered inside. The interior decorations were extremely simple, not feeling at all like a royal family aura. An old figure with a head full of silver hair sat cross-legged on a soft cushion.

The figure slowly turned after the two entered, revealing a craggy old face. His complexion was a little gloomy, and he looked senile, like an ordinary old man next door.

Only the pair of eyes maintained incredible sharpness. The old man looked at Chu Mo, and gave him a slight smile: “May I trouble noble son Chu.”

Chu Mo nodded, and gently said: “This junior humbly greets Mister Tan Tai!”

The old man moved his arm, as if thinking to say something, but he couldn't help but spit up a mouthful of blood. Soon after, his body swayed two times, and his complexion became even more gloomy.

The emperor quickly walked over and supported the old man, saying: “Mister's injuries are serious. Don't speak too much, Chu Mo is no outsider.”

Chu Mo thought: ‘Jade, let me see this person's condition.’

Soon after, specific information about the old man appeared within Chu Mo's mind.

“Rank seven, understanding intent realm. Physique quality rank three. Seriously injured, meridians have suffered damage. Medicine to cure ailment.....”

‘Physique quality rank three? Why rank three?’

Chu Mo was a little uncertain, because he remembered, most cultivators that reach the Yuan closure realm have a physique that

reaches the third rank. This old man was already a seventh rank understanding intent realm cultivator, but his physique was unexpectedly at the third rank.

Chu Mo finally understood all of a sudden. It seemed for the great majority of people in this world, even if they cultivated to a high level, their physique quality was very difficult to promote to the same realm.

Chu Mo finally understood the importance of tempering the body. He understood the preciousness of the Yuan beast blood baths that his master gave him.

When looking at it this way, Big Fool's (Gao Yingjun's) ninth rank physique was a world rarity!

“Yes.....master said that he never saw a person with an innate level physique, and he only ever saw a few people with a ninth rank physique.”

Chu Mo recalled the words of the Demon Lord. He didn't care too much at the time, but now it suddenly made sense.

What the Demon Lord told him was knowledge from the Immortal World!

Ninth rank physiques weren't plentiful even in the Immortal World.

When looking at it this way, Big Fool could become a powerful cultivator if he entered the Immortal World.

Chu Mo's eyes twinkled, and he thought: 'Looks like I need to prepare a cultivation plan for him.'

"Chu Mo, how is it?" He couldn't help but ask. Seeing Chu Mo stare at Mister Tan Tai for a long time without speaking, the emperor just couldn't take it anymore.

Chu Mo came back to his senses, then said in a low voice: "Mister Tan Tai's injuries are very serious."

The emperor nodded with a heavy expression, thinking wasn't it was far more than serious? It was extremely grave! Chen Ao'bing was simply too savage. She said that she gave a lesson, but in reality, she nearly killed him.

Mister Tan Tai was only able to sit there because the royal family stored up top grade Yuan medicine over the years. The emperor didn't care about the cost, and used these medicines for him, temporarily sustaining his life.

Otherwise Mister Tan Tai, the understanding intent expert, would have probably been destroyed that night!

Mister Tan Tai wasn't the only hidden ace of the royal family, but according to the emperor, losing Mister Tan Tai was the same as losing almost half of his experts. It would be a huge loss to Da

Xia!

As a result, the emperor always maintained a certain confidence towards the sects in the past, and he always maintained a great relationship with Mister Tan Tai.

No matter which aspect, the royal family could not afford to lose a seventh rank cultivator.

Mister Tan Tai appeared much more relaxed than the emperor. He managed to smile and say to Chu Mo: “It doesn’t matter. I know full well the extent of my injuries. Life and death is up to fate.”

The emperor’s brow furrowed, and he expectantly looked at Chu Mo.

Chu Mo contemplated a short period of time, and then he said: “This matter.....requires my master’s personal action.”

The emperor’s eyes lit up right away. He said to Chu Mo: “I will personally prepare whatever you need!”

The eyes of Mister Tan Tai also showed a trace of hope. He said in a deep voice: “I once heard that young friend Chu’s master is a mysterious person. This time.....I must inconvenience him.”

Chu Mo said: “My master is elusive, and he has practically no communications with anyone. It’s very hard for me to meet him.”

Mister Tan Tai nodded: “Mysterious people have such a disposition.”

Chu Mo said: “The way it is, I can first prepare a prescription. The emperor can prepare the ingredients according to the prescription. I have some of the ingredients, but some.....I don’t have the ability to find.”

The emperor nodded. He knew that Chu Mo prepared medicine for Xia Jing, so he must have some herbs on hand. He said to this: “You only need to prepare the necessary things. As long as it can be found, I will find it.”

The emperor looked back at Mister Tan Tai as he spoke: “Please keep persevering Mister. I will work with all my strength!”

Mister Tan Tai nodded: “No problem. I can delay for a moment, there should be no harm.” He then looked back at Chu Mo: “Sorry to trouble you young friend.”

Chu Mo smiled: “Mister keeps watch over the royal palace, and provides all of Da Xia with peace and safety. This youth admires you very much. So please don’t worry Mister Tan Tai, this youth from the younger generation will work with all his power!”

Mister Tan Tai appeared extremely touched. He took the initiative and said: “I heard that my young friend wishes to establish an academy? If your master can cure my injuries, then I will help you out young friend.”

Chu Mo's eyes became bright. This old man was very honorable!

"Many thanks Mister Tan Tai!" Chu Mo bowed to the old man.

Chapter 143: Dinner Invitation

The emperor sighed to himself: ‘This crafty little thing. He’s pulled almost all of the Yellow Flame City experts to his side. Looks like the Misty Palace Royal Academy.....still belongs to them!’

However, the emperor fully understood after experiencing so many things.

The emperor was entirely responsible for the whole affair!

If he wasn’t persuaded by the crown prince, then the marriage decree wouldn’t have happened. Chen Xingxue wouldn’t have thought to help Miao Yiniang enter Flying Immortal. Without this thought, he never would have aggravated that terrifying woman, and the crown prince wouldn’t have been blinded. Mister Tan Tai wouldn’t have been seriously injured.

Although he was furious at his daughter for turning against the family, the emperor understood her need to repay Chu Mo. She couldn’t be blamed.

And so, the root of the matter stems from his decree.

Soon after, Chu Mo and the emperor departed from Mister Tan Tai, leaving this area, and returning to the royal palace.

Chu Mo took his leave after giving the emperor a list of drug ingredients.

Right when he returned home, a servant passed him an invitation card, and the servant said that someone searched for him while he was out.

Chu Mo opened up the invitation and looked at its contents. He was a little stunned.

The invitation actually came from Wang Dafa.

It was an invitation for a feast tonight at Wang Dafa's mansion.

As far as the purpose of the feast, and the people in attendance, there wasn't a single word of indication!

Chu Mo's thoughts were a little uncertain. As a gold rank elder of the Azure Dragon Court, Wang Dafa doesn't do anything randomly.

His migraines should be healed, unless he didn't trust the medicine, and secretly used some to be tested. If that's the case, then don't expect Chu Mo to give him a second batch!

The invitation card didn't state the theme of the feast.....

Chu Mo was thinking as he stared at the invitation card, and suddenly, he seemed to come up with something.

He gave an order soon after: “Prepare me a set of clothes for the feast. I want to go tonight.”

The setting sun was covered in endless mist, and the sunset glow reflected off the sky.

Chu Mo’s carriage arrived at the “King Mansion” gate in the evening.

Someone welcomed Chu Mo inside, and led him towards the banquet hall.

Chu Mo curiously asked: “How’s the host?”

The person welcoming Chu Mo was a young male servant, appearing to be eighteen or nineteen. He faced Chu Mo and gave a smile: “Don’t be strange noble son Chu. My master is currently keeping the guests company. He told me to give noble son Chu a special explanation. He doesn’t have any way to personally welcome noble son Chu right now.”

“Oh, are there many people at the banquet tonight?” Chu Mo asked.

The young servant looked left and right, then quietly said: “There’s actually quite a few, but the large majority are extremely low-key.”

The tip of Chu Mo’s brow slightly raised. He seemed to

understand about tonight's banquet. The people present were likely from the Azure Dragon Court!

The Azure Dragon Court possessed enormous influential power on the Azure Dragon Continent, and they also had enough clout to overlook the secular world royal power. However, they were extremely low-key. Just because they were able to overlook secular world royal power, it didn't mean that they would really do so.

Because even though they possessed power that soared above the royal authority, in the end.....they still wanted to exist within the secular world. There were too many places that royal authority could be used.

Because of this, the two sides maintained a silent agreement.

Chu Mo didn't ask anything else, and he followed the young servant into the banquet hall.

Chu Mo felt the atmosphere of the banquet hall slow down as soon as he entered. Several people stopped in the middle of their conversations, and they simultaneously looked at the door.

There weren't too many people within the banquet hall, but there were at least between thirty and fifty.

Several people brimmed with curiosity as they looked at Chu Mo. They seemed to be saying: 'He is Chu Mo?'

At the same time, Chu Mo felt several examining eyes. Those looks.....didn't seem to be friendly.

Chu Mo looked over at the several people staring. They weren't old, and they all seemed to be about the same age as himself. They all looked fourteen or fifteen. But their manner was noble, as well as appearing arrogant. Their clothes didn't appear to be anything special upon first glance, but after carefully inspecting, they used sophisticated materials, showing that they were crafted by masters.

A clear laughter came from among the crowd at this time: “:Little brother Chu Mo has come? Ha ha, this older brother hasn't welcomed you yet, please see forgiveness worthy little brother!”

Wang Dafa stood up, started walking towards Chu Mo, and said: “This is Chu Mo, the grandson of old General Fan. Don't look down on him. He's quite amazing. He cured the migraines that I had for several years. Have you all heard about prince Xia Jing? That guy lacked any humanity, and sought all kinds of doctors, but no one could cure him. Our noble son Chu acted, and directly cured his illness.”

Wang Dafa walked over to Chu Mo as he spoke: “Please forgive me for not explaining things earlier with you. Actually everyone here today is a high level member of the Azure Dragon Court. This old brother was afraid. If this news was leaked, it might have been unfavorable to you little brother. I didn't notify you beforehand because of this.”

Chu Mo slightly smiled, then faced the crowd and nodded.

Wang Dafa led Chu Mo by the arm, and said: “Come come come, to the head seat. This older brother will introduce you to several big characters!”

Chu Mo thought: ‘Wang Dafa, you are already a gold rank elder, possessing an extremely high position in the Azure Dragon Court. Apart from the Azure Dragon Court ruler, who could be called a big character by you?’

Several people in the banquet hall appeared shocked after seeing Wang Dafa’s attitude.

Wang Dafa was an Azure Dragon Court gold rank elder. He was in an extremely high position within the whole Azure Dragon Court. The large majority of people present were silver rank deacons, and several were bronze rank stewards. They were all Azure Dragon Court core members, but their status couldn’t be compared with Wang Dafa.

Because of this, after seeing Wang Dafa’s attitude towards Chu Mo, the vast majority of people withdrew their earlier contempt towards Chu Mo.

They started to seriously size up this youth.

Wang Dafa brought Chu Mo over to a table. He smiled and said: “I must seriously give you all an introduction. This is Chu Mo. His medical skill is brilliant. He cured my migraines.”

He looked at Chu Mo as he spoke, and then introduced the people one by one: “This person is Zhao Qing, an Azure Dragon Court gold rank elder. He is also an elder of the Azure Dragon continent’s well-known Heavenly Sword sect!”

Chu Mo looked at the thin old cultivator, slightly smiled, and bowed with cupped hands. Yet he thought: ‘Heavenly Sword sect? Don’t tell me that this is the master of Leng Qiuming, the person I met on the grasslands?’

Chu Mo clearly remembered toying with Leng Qiuming and the others after obtaining Murdering Heaven. He never heard any news about them afterwards. In the depths of his heart, Chu Mo didn’t have much of an impression towards Leng Qiuming.

Zhao Qing looked at Chu Mo, and he plainly nodded. He sighed, but didn’t follow up with anything else. He was quite reserved.

Wang Dafa didn’t seem bothered. He expected their attitudes to be a little cold towards Chu Mo.

The main reason he invited Chu Mo today was because of the Misty Palace Royal Academy. It already attracted a great degree of interest from the Azure Dragon Court!

Chapter 144: No Good

The Azure Dragon Court was naturally very clear about the reactions and movements of the Vermilion Bird Association.

Twelve disciples fled carrying the entire heritage when the Misty Palace was destroyed. The Azure Dragon Court was well aware of the situation.

Because of this, the higher-ups of the Azure Dragon Court quickly came to a decision: No matter what, we must take the Misty Palace heritage portion within Yellow Flame City.....before the Vermilion Bird Association rushes in!

The organizational structure of the Azure Dragon Court was extremely complicated. Several members came from the Azure Dragon continent sects. Which one of them wouldn't want the heritage of the Vermilion Bird continent's number one sect?

The reason they reacted a little slow, was because the Azure Dragon Court members needed to decide on the heritage distribution. There was endless ruckus. Everyone wanted a little bit more, and no one was willing to compromise.

Because of this, the Azure Dragon Court members wrangled for a long time. They finally came to a distribution method that everyone could accept in the end. As a result, the Azure Dragon Court directly sent a large amount of higher-ups and elites to Yellow Flame City.

The people present today from the bronze and silver ranks, they were all big figures from the Azure Dragon Court with true power. Several of the younger ones had very strong power supporting them.

It could be said, the group of Azure Dragon Court members present here, they weren't sent to snipe out the Vermilion Bird Association. They came for the Misty Palace heritage!

The relationship between Chu Mo and Miao Yiniang wasn't hard to investigate by using the Azure Dragon Court intelligence gathering power. The other recent events within Yellow Flame City weren't hard to investigate either.

Because of this, the higher figures within the Azure Dragon Court gave Wang Dafa pressure. They made him invite Chu Mo. The best outcome would be for Chu Mo to nicely give up the Misty Palace heritage.

That was the best situation for everyone.

If Chu Mo didn't obey, then..... they didn't mind taking Chu Mo captive until he agreed!

Because of this, Wang Dafa didn't try and persuade these people. He secretly sent the Azure Dragon Court ruler a letter, but the court ruler's reply left Wang Dafa discouraged.

The court ruler favored these people!

[The hermit](#) was terrifying, but the Azure Dragon Court was untouchable!

[TL: The 'hermit' is a reference to Chu Mo's master.]

The Azure Dragon Court was supported by all the top level sects of the Azure Dragon Continent. Their network was terrifying to imagine, and they weren't unfamiliar with hermits.

Because of this, the entire Azure Dragon Court, apart from Wang Dafa, didn't place Chu Mo in their eyes.

Wang Dafa didn't originally didn't agree to invite Chu Mo, but he couldn't oppose the will of the masses. That was the reason why Wang Dafa used very formal writing on the invitation card. In the depths of his heart, he really didn't want Chu Mo to come.

He never thought Chu Mo would still come.

Wang Dafa already lost hope, and he was somewhat touched. Chu Mo clearly took him for a friend. He came to the banquet to give Wang Dafa face.

Wang Dafa therefore thought: 'I cannot let this group of people harm Chu Mo at my house today, no matter what.' Therefore, even though he didn't go out to greet Chu Mo, he made his trusted subordinate give Chu Mo an explanation, that he would assume such an attitude after Chu Mo entered.

This was to tell everyone, this Chu Mo was a personal friend of Wang Dafa!

Chu Mo naturally felt the subtle atmosphere.

Soon after, Wang Dafa introduced Chu Mo to the others at the table.

“This is Azure Dragon Court gold rank elder Guo Xing. He is also a Golden Knife sect elder.”

“This is Azure Dragon Court gold rank elder Wang Zhi. He is also a Raging Inferno sect elder.

“This person.....is Azure Dragon Court advanced gold rank elder Fu Long. He is also.....”

When the introductions got to the gold rank elder Fu Long, the fifty-plus year old man suddenly waved a hand, interrupting Wang Dafa’s words. He squinted, seeming to smile without smiling at Chu Mo: “You.....are Chu Mo?”

Chu Mo wrinkled his brow, displeased inside. Even Heavenly Sword elder Zhao Qing was reserved, arrogant, and somewhat unreasonable, but at the very least, he didn’t say anything.

The Golden Knife elder Guo Xing and Raging Inferno elder Wan Zhi dully nodded towards Chu Mo. Their attitudes couldn’t be considered warm, but at least it was a greeting.

‘What’s the matter with this Fu Long? Did I offend him?’ Chu Mo thought, but he sensitively noticed something. Wang Dafa said that Fu Long was an advanced gold rank elder when he gave the introduction.

Sounded like.....he was one level higher than a gold rank elder.

“Boy, he asked you something. Are you deaf?” An ice-cold youth’s voice sounded out from a table behind the old cultivator. The tone was extremely unwelcoming.

A cold light flashed across Chu Mo’s eyes, and he glanced over at the person.

The person was in his twenties. He had a handsome appearance, but he looked arrogant, with thin lips making him seem extremely nasty. He looked provokingly at Chu Mo.

Wang Dafa’s facial colour immediately became cold. He looked over there, and he dully said: “Noble son Chu is my guest.”

“Hey, elder Wang, you know best how much money a gold rank elder position costs. You had best stop putting on airs in my presence.” The young man dully said.

“You.....” Wang Dafa’s eyes suddenly flashed with ice-cold rays of light. He naturally didn’t become a gold rank elder because of his connections, and it also wasn’t because of his strength or

influence. He relied on smarts and extremely powerful business ability!

Wang Dafa supported more than half of the Azure Dragon Court's various expenses all by himself. To say he was the Azure Dragon Court's god of wealth would be an understatement.

Because of this, Wang Dafa held the nickname 'Great Butler' within the Azure Dragon Court's interior.

This nickname was not a well-intentioned one. Several people believed that Wang Dafa's realm was lacking. Letting him be a silver deacon was already high enough! He didn't have the qualifications to be a gold rank elder. This wasn't just the voice of a few within the Azure Dragon Court. Luckily the Azure Dragon Court ruler always supported Wang Dafa.

Fu Long sat there, and plainly said: "Does elder Wang have the knowledge of a child?"

Wang Dafa laughed with extreme fury, [and he said](#): "Good, truly proven to be a grand Immortal Sky top grade sect disciple, I've been taught!"

[TL: Heavy sarcasm here from Mr. Wang]

A ray of light flashed across Chu Mo's pupils. He understood.

Immortal Sky!

This Fu Long and the young man both came from Immortal Sky!

Chu Mo requested to enter Immortal Sky last year. The insults he suffered and forced departure were no secret in Immortal Sky. Countless people witnessed the scene after all.

Because of this, it wasn't odd for Fu Long and the young man to know.

However, Chu Mo didn't understand. Why did they aim at him? Could Fu Long be an old friend of the seventh elder?

“Chu Mo, I heard you tried to enter Immortal Sky, but your qualifications weren't enough. And you were driven out.” Fu Long sat there. He dully spoke to Chu Mo: “I never thought, you made a complete change in the blink of an eye.....becoming some godly doctor of this generation. Heh heh, it's truly a little interesting.”

Chu Mo looked at Fu Long, and his tone became flat: “Yes ah, but what does this have to do with you elder Fu Long?”

Chapter 145: Trust

All of the people in the hall started to quietly murmur.

“What? I never thought, this honored guest of elder Wang Dafa, he’s actually the rejected disciple of Immortal Sky? This is really interesting. Elder Wang has been in business for a lifetime, looks like I’ve seen him make a mistake.”

“I can’t say for sure if his cultivation is bad, but he has a skill in medicine.”

“Yes ah, elder Wang can’t be blamed. This youth cured the inhuman Xia Jing. Maybe our elder Wang also.....”

“Ha ha ha ha.” Low bursts of laughter sounded through the banquet hall.

Wang Dafa’s realm wasn’t especially high, but that didn’t mean he couldn’t hear the mocking voices within the hall. His face became pale with rage.

No matter how it was said, Wang Dafa was an Azure Dragon Court gold rank elder. He gave enormous contributions to the entire Azure Dragon Court.

Wang Dafa very rarely came in contact with other Azure Dragon Court members. He knew that other people didn’t have a high evaluation of him, but he never thought a group from the silver

and bronze rank would dare mock him this way.

This could only mean one thing. On an ordinary day at the Azure Dragon Court headquarters, practically no one.....had any respect for Wang Dafa!

Behind elder Fu Long, that young man immediately stood up and slapped the table. He raged: “The nerve! A trivial Immortal Sky reject actually dares be so arrogant. I’ve seen you’ve lived enough!”

Chu Mo drooped his eyelids, and glanced at elder Fu Long. He dully said: “Not entering Immortal Sky was actually my good fortune. Otherwise, I would be in the same sect as this irrational thing, and very much loathe it.”

“I’ll kill you!” The young man soared over, and furiously stared Chu Mo down. At the same time, a powerful aura erupted from him.

It was like bloody smelling wind blew past the banquet hall. An extremely intense bloody aura pressured towards Chu Mo.

Iron blood realm!

This youth in his twenties actually reach the fifth rank iron blood realm!

This realm was called the thousand man killer in the secular world!

This demonstrated the terror of the realm.

Chu Mo's grandfather was much older, but he still hadn't broken through to this realm. However, this person wasn't even past his twenties, and he actually successfully broke into the fifth realm. He also seemed like someone who didn't rely on pills to make a breakthrough. Because of this, he really did have the qualifications to be arrogant.

Wang Dafa's body slightly trembled. He looked to Elder Fu Long and said: "Are you planning to wreck my house?"

Elder Fu Long lazily turned his head, finally looking at the young man: "Fine, don't threaten to kill people here. Give elder Wang a little face."

The young man finally pulled back his aura. He coldly stared at Chu Mo: "Seems your luck is good!" He sat down in a huff as he spoke.

Elder Fu Long looked towards Wang Dafa at this moment: "Elder Wang should be a little more careful. Don't be cheated by the other party. This teenager has swindled several. Elder Wang has a big enterprise, and might not mind being cheated out of a little money. But it won't be very pleasant if this kind of news spreads out."

Wang Dafa coldly said: "I still have the ability to distinguish truth from lies. This doesn't concern elder Fu Long."

Fu Long dully said: “This has nothing to do with me; however, I’m not interested in sitting at the same table as an Immortal Sky reject. I won’t lose face for that person.”

Elder Fu Long stood up as he spoke, and unexpectedly walked over to the table behind.

This left elder Wang awkwardly standing there. He looked livid, as he watched elder Fu Long waltz over to the Immortal Sky disciple’s table.

The other Azure Dragon Court gold rank elders couldn’t help but be slightly stunned. They looked at the livid Wang Dafa, and then looked over at Fu Long on another table. After a short period of time, they all made the same move.

Zhao Qing took the lead, Guo Xing and Wan Zhi followed soon after, over towards the other table.

These people all had face. Fu Long already said it, this was an Immortal Sky reject. Wouldn’t they lose too much value by still sitting here?

The table was left with the two people Wang Dafa hadn’t yet introduced. They sat there, awkwardly, without moving.

These two were Azure Dragon Court gold rank elders that actually had a good personal relationship with Wang Dafa. They

were also embarrassed by elder Fu Long's words, but they couldn't stand up and leave. Wang Dafa would probably erupt if that were to happen.

But right now, he was just short of exploding.

Wang Dafa turned around, faced Chu Mo, and deeply bowed: "Worthy brother Chu, I'm sorry. I never thought this would happen. I would have never sent the invitation if I knew earlier. I suppose you no longer have an appetite. Your big brother can only shamelessly ask that you return early. I will personally give you a visit, and make an apology!"

Chu Mo nodded. Confronted by Fu Long's action, he had no more face leftover. The only feeling left was an extremely poor impression towards the whole Immortal Sky!

Originally he merely hated seventh elder Zhao Hongzhi, and then the later Immortal Sky disciple Zhao Fan. Now an unknown youth and elder Fu Long appeared. There was no favorable opinion left for the Immortal Sky in Chu Mo's mind.

Just when Chu Mo thought to leave, elder Fu Long drooped his eyelids and dully said: "He can go, but the things stay."

"Right, if you wish to live a little longer, hand over all the things that don't belong to you. Otherwise, you won't walk out the door today." The young man sneered from elder Fu Long's side.

The entire banquet hall's atmosphere became tense right away. Everyone looked at Chu Mo. Their glowing eyes were full of greed!

Wang Dafa knew exactly what these people were thinking, but he never thought that they would cause trouble here. This was the same as including Wang Dafa in the mix.

No matter how much Chu Mo trusted him, he would certainly think: 'You trapped me Wang Dafa!'

The biggest taboo for a business man was cheating people!

Who will do trade with you if there is no trust?

Because of this, Wang Dafa's complexion became extremely cold. He furiously looked at elder Fu Long: "Noble son Chu is my guest! You all dare disrespect him today? Do you really believe my gold rank elder status is a joke?"

The words of Wang Dafa resounded. The originally silent banquet hall became even more quiet. You could hear a needle drop.

Everyone looked at Wang Dafa shocked, their expressions full of disbelief. They couldn't believe that 'one of their own' would actually protect an outsider like this.

Haaa ha ha!

The crowd of people immediately started to jeer.

Someone sneered: “Wang Dafa, it’s a pity this level of performance won’t be seen by the world. You really are putting on a facade! You dare say, when you sent out the invitation, you didn’t know what we would do? Now you’re trying your hardest to play innocent, heh, you’re worthy of the title businessman. Your mind.....is truly top quality. You’re still not trying to offend someone, even at this very moment.”

The person speaking didn’t have a low realm. His voice moved swiftly, making it hard to guess where the voice came from.

Wang Da’s expression became livid. He was just about to say something.

Chu Mo patted Wang Dafa’s shoulder, and he spoke with a gentle smile: “Older brother, there’s nothing to say. I trust you!”

Chapter 146: Challenge

Wang Dafa looked ashamed: “Worthy Little brother, please forgive me. I wouldn’t have sent you an invitation card if I knew something would happen. But please don’t worry little brother. No matter what happens today, I will protect you entirely!”

Chu Mo smiled: “I said that I trust you, so I trust you. Because even without your invitation, they would still do what they want. If you really wanted to distance yourself from me, there are several other options. There was no need to do this at your house. Isn’t it unfortunate?”

The mature businessman’s eyes turned red at the unexpected words of Chu Mo. He coldly looked at elder Fu Long and the rest: “This is my house! I may not be able to stop you if you wish to act here! But if you act, I’m completely severing myself from the Azure Dragon Court! If you can bear the blame, then go ahead and act!”

“There’s no need to keep up the pretense. Don’t let us act here, then simple, let Chu Mo go. We will take action on the streets. Elder Wang, you are the god of wealth for the Azure Dragon Court. We don’t dare force you to rebel.” The ice-cold voice, filled with ridicule, once again floated through the hall.

Soon after, another person said: “Do you all understand what elder Wang means? Don’t act here. Wait until the little thing leaves his house, then act in the first moment. Ah, our elder Wang is truly a righteous man. He cannot bear seeing a friend troubled in his own home.”

Several people in the banquet hall couldn't help but laugh. Clearly these words embodied their thoughts.

In their opinion, Wang Dafa was putting on a show!

He didn't want these people to act in his home, and even threatened to leave the Azure Dragon Court.....but in reality, who didn't know among the crowd? Was the Azure Dragon Court that easy to leave?

Was leaving just leaving? Don't mention a gold rank elder, even the lowest level black iron member would face matchless pressure from the Azure Dragon Court. They would be pursued until death!

Wang Dafa was seething in anger. He gnashed his teeth and growled: "Don't believe? Remember, today you've forced me! Wait until the court master asks what happened. Tell him the truth if you have the courage! Let me state this clearly! If anything unforeseen happens to Chu Mo in the next three days, then I will immediately sever ties with the Azure Dragon Court! Don't use that expression to look at me. I know what you're thinking. You think I'm blowing smoke, I would never dare leave the Azure Dragon Court? Don't forget that this world is called the four continents! It's not called the Azure Dragon continent! I may not have any combat ability, but this world isn't lacking in powerful experts! But.....there is a lack of powerful businessmen."

All of the people shivered in fear. They weren't fools. They naturally understood what Wang Dafa meant.

Normally speaking, Azure Dragon Court Members would never dare leave.

But who is Wang Dafa? He isn't merely a gold rank elder, but he is also a rare talented businessman!

He didn't rely on the Azure Dragon Court to achieve his current success. He was originally very accomplished, and then he entered the Azure Dragon Court.

That was to say, the Azure Dragon Court depended on Wang Dafa much more than he depended on the Azure Dragon Court!

There were no immortals on the four continents. Everyone needed food, clothes, and shelter. Which one of the powerful cultivators on high was concerned on a daily basis? But which one.....could do without?

Wang Dafa's importance to the Azure Dragon Court was self-evident!

Wang Dafa's words were extremely clear. This world is called the four continents, not the Azure Dragon Continent!

In addition to the Azure Dragon Court, there was the Vermilion Bird Association, the White Tiger Temple, and the Black Tortoise Palace!

As for a talent like Wang Dafa, someone worth millions and

millions, which power wouldn't fight over him?

Ignore the mocking and despising glances from Fu Long. If Wang Dafa wanted to enter Immortal Sky, he wouldn't have any qualifications to resist. Even the Immortal Sky master would personally make a visit! And his attitude would be countless times better than Fu Long's!

At that time, the position of Wang Dafa would be no less than Fu Long's at the Immortal Sky!

This was the value of Wang Dafa!

Therefore, Wang Dafa dared challenge this group. Because either the fish dies or the net splits, he didn't care about any threat.

Fu Long and the others looked ill-intentioned at Wang Dafa. Wang's vision was equally cold, and he stared right back at the group.

Cultivators weren't the only ones with nerves of steel.

Wang Dafa already lost hope for the Azure Dragon Court. He never thought the place that he helped for so many years would actually look at him this way.

The Azure Dragon Court wanted the Misty Palace heritage. This was nothing big. Who wouldn't want it? Wang Dafa himself also wanted it!

But the old saying goes, ‘nobles love wealth, they only need a reason to take.’ Wang Dafa was no noble himself, but he was a businessman! Everything in the world has value in the eyes of a businessman! Anything can be discussed!

He believed, so long as he offered a price that could tempt Chu Mo, then, there may be some room to maneuver.

Even more so, there was an even simpler way. That was, send some gifted children of the family to study at the Misty Palace Royal Academy. This wouldn’t even take twenty years to accomplish. Except for a few core pieces of the Misty Palace heritage, all the rest could be obtained without staining a single blade with blood.

This was the best way!

Wang Dafa and Chu Mo didn’t really have a deep relationship. But he had a policy. No matter what, so long as there is a better way, don’t use the worst solution.

Becoming hostile with Chu Mo was the worst solution in Wang Dafa’s opinion.

But everyone in the Azure Dragon Court.....they all chose the worst path.

Wang Dafa led Chu Mo outside of the banquet hall, all the way

until Chu Mo arrived at the gate. He apologetically spoke: “Worthy little brother. I can only help you this much. Three days, the farther you run the better! You absolutely must not stay in Yellow Flame City. They are reckless without fear. Even if the royal family appears, it will be of no use!”

Chu Mo laughed, then said to Wang Da Fa: “Older brother had no choice this time, and had to give me an invitation. But I don’t blame you! Let these people come.”

Chu Mo seriously looked at Wang Dafa: “However, I do have a favor to ask. I don’t know if you would be interested.”

“Eh? Speak, I will do it if I can!” Wang Dafa’s expression also became serious.

Chu Mo smiled and shook his head: “Perhaps it will happen, perhaps it won’t. I will say it, please just listen older brother.”

“Yes, speak!” Wang Dafa looked at Chu Mo.

Chu Mo said: “If the Azure Dragon Court can be destroyed someday, I hope older brother will help me.”

“De.....destroyed.....” Wang Dafa’s mouth violently twitched. He stared at Chu Mo like he was staring at a fool: “Are you joking little brother?”

Chu Mo chuckled: “Older brother thinks I’m joking.”

Wang Dafa Wrinkled his brow, seeming to think about the possibility of it happening. However, he immediately shook his head, and he bitterly smiled: “This isn’t possible. You don’t know the complexity of the Azure Dragon Court. They have direct or indirect relations with all the medium and large sects on the Azure Dragon continent. They will never allow any surprises for the Azure Dragon Court.”

Chu Mo nodded with a smile: “Then take me for a fool with a dream little brother.” Chu Mo faced Wang Dafa and waved as he spoke. He then departed with a relaxed expression.

Wang Dafa watched Chu Mo as he departed, and he became silent a moment. He suddenly said: “If.....there really is a day, then I promise!”

Chu Mo didn’t turn his head back. He merely raised his right hand, and he lifted up a thumb.

Chapter 147: Leaving The City

Wang Dafa had grown hostile, and Chu Mo departed. The banquet at the 'King Mansion' ended in failure, and the people parted on bad terms. Who knows how many people secretly protested to the Azure Dragon Court ruler about Wang Dafa.

Even if Wang Dafa knew, he wouldn't care too much. He couldn't stop thinking about what Chu Mo said: If the Azure Dragon Court can be destroyed someday, I hope older brother will help me.....

Destruction of the Azure Dragon Court?

How could it be possible?

Very few people knew, but the Azure Dragon Court ruler was actually a powerful hermit!

Obscure hermit, distinguished hermit!

A phrase that was recognized by all the strong people on the four continents.

Obscure hermit meant that practically all hermits are extremely mysterious. Very few people know their history and details. Distinguished hermit meant that all hermits have powerful abilities. Once they act, it is earth shattering!

Because of this, the word hermit signified a top level cultivator on the four continents!

Chu Mo's master was most likely a hermit, but the Azure Dragon Court also had a hermit in the background!

“Therefore.....worthy brother Chu, I'm really not looking lightly upon you. Destroying the Azure Dragon Court is a hundred times harder than destroying ten Da Xias!” Wang Dafa mumbled. He couldn't help but look up and sigh.

.....

Dusk.

Chu Mo walked unhurried, like he was taking a stroll.

He didn't return home, but rather headed towards Gluttonous Ogre. This already became one of Chu Mo's habits, even though Miao Yiniang already departed. Chu Mo was still used to going there whenever something happened.

Chu Mo first saw Chu Yan when he arrived at Gluttonous Ogre, and he explained things to her. He wrote a letter soon after. He

then made her send someone to the palace and deliver it to the emperor.

Chu Mo then asked for Chu Yan to tell Xu Fufu about the most recent events. He explained that they needed to be low-key for the time being, and not cause any chaos.

Chu Yan wrinkled her brow. Her eyes showed with worry, and she couldn't help but hesitantly ask Chu Mo: "Noble son, why do I sense you're....."

"Making funeral arrangements?" Chu Mo smiled as he spoke to the hesitant Chu Yan.

"Don't make irresponsible remarks noble son." Chu Yan angrily spoke.

Chu Mo laughed: "There's no problem. I have something to do, and I must leave for a couple of days. You also need to be careful over the next few days."

"Noble son, there's really nothing wrong? According to what I know, there's a large amount of sect members appearing in Yellow Flame City. Not only are there Vermilion Bird continent members, but there are also several from the Azure Dragon continent. There's also been spies from other nations sneaking in." Chu Yan worriedly looked at Chu Mo: "Everything looks the same as always on the surface, flourishing with activity. But in reality, the storm is brewing. Isn't it true.....they are all coming right before the Misty Palace Royal Academy is established?"

Chu Mo nodded: “Don’t worry. You don’t need to be anxious about these things. You also mustn’t act rashly! The information you’ve obtained, it should already explain how powerful our organization is becoming! You must continue to work hard!”

Chu Yan nibbled her lower lip, and she softly said: “Noble son, you must be safe. I can’t live alone if noble son encounters some kind of danger!”

“Don’t say these things. I really don’t have any problems, but on the off chance that something bad happens, you must continue to live well. And you must get revenge for me!” Chu Mo smiled as he spoke.

The worry in Chu Yan’s eyes didn’t reduce in the slightest. A woman’s intuition is extremely sensitive. Chu Yan could tell that Chu Mo was hiding something from her. But Chu Mo didn’t want to say, and she didn’t have a way to make him.

“Right noble son, our organization has never had a name. Do you want to give it one?” Chu Yan said all of the sudden.

Chu Mo scratched his head: “I’m not very good at naming things. Let me think about it.....”

Chu Mo sat down and pondered as he spoke. He thought: ‘The countless sects on the four continents are like a large net, spreading out over the earth and sky, making us unable to move a single step.’

He had an intense conviction in his thoughts. He must break open the net!

Cut it open with one blade.....

Straight into the highest heavens!

Chu Mo slightly hesitated a moment, then suddenly said: “Call it Murdering Heaven!”

“Murdering Heaven?” Chu Yan wrinkled her brow, and then mumbled: “Such a heavy murderous spirit, but.....it’s also very domineering! Good, we will call it Murdering Heaven!”

Chu Mo then told Chu Yan that he was going to leave Gluttonous Ogre. He was going on a stroll outside of the city.

A large amount of people were secretly listening to him, but Chu Mo seemed like he was completely unaware. He looked relaxed, and his expression was like going on a hike.

It was already very late at night, and the early spring in April.

The weather already started to warm up, but the night winds were still a little cold. Therefore, practically no one else was out on the streets at night.

“That boy is actually going outside the city alone? Does he resent death not coming fast enough?”

“Could there be an ambush outside the city?”

“Bullshit an ambush! He’s just a secular world brat that’s it. Even if he used all his efforts to collect top grade sect medicine, the most he could be is at the third rank Yuan closure realm. The nation of Da Xia is considered a high level secular world nation on the Azure Dragon continent, but the strongest person in the palace is probably a seventh rank understanding intent realm cultivator. Such an expert is a little troublesome, but would he suddenly run out and help this brat?

“Right, even if the expert agreed to act, the emperor wouldn’t agree! Which one of the secular world dynasties dares to openly challenge us? Not to mention, the emperors all need a feeling of safety. They would never allow something to threaten their safety.”

Several people were secretly talking in the night. They couldn’t guess why Chu Mo was doing this.

But they only saw him as a secular world teenager, that’s it. What tricks could be up his sleeve?

Wang Dafa naturally had his own intelligence sources. He heard that Chu Mo left Gluttonous Ogre, and Chu Mo was now heading outside the city all alone. His first reaction was to send people to block Chu Mo.

The Azure Dragon Court members might have some apprehension within the city. Once outside the city.....there really wasn't any hesitation.

Moreover, was it just the Azure Dragon Court keeping an eye on Chu Mo?

The Vermilion Bird Association members were most certainly in the shadows, glaring at Chu Mo like a tiger watching its prey!

When the sect members from the Vermilion continent smelled the scent of Azure Dragon continent sects.....they had no reason to let Chu Mo leave the city alone.

Chu Mo was simply a big chunk of sweet dessert. Anyone who saw him.....wanted to ruthlessly take a bite.

However, Wang Dafa calmed down soon after.

He recalled the words and deeds of Chu Mo since their first meeting.

After a while, Wang Dafa wrinkled his brow, and and then slowly smoothed it back out.

His revealed a dull smile.

“Atta boy!”

Chapter 148: Restless Night

The first time Wang Dafa met Chu Mo was at the Windcloud auction house. Chu Mo was an unfamiliar youth at that time.

The ability to disguise himself was excellent. If Wang Dafa didn't combine all kinds of information, and determined it was Chu Mo, then he would have never believed the youth had anything to do with Chu Mo.

Chu Mo wasn't old.....you could even say he was too young. In fact he was still a youth, but Wang Dafa didn't underestimate Chu Mo in the slightest.

This was an incomparably bold, careful, and prideful youth!

No matter who it was, so long as they looked down upon him, they would certainly have a bitter pill to swallow.

“Therefore, he definitely isn't doing something stupid! Don't tell me.....his master appeared?” A ferocious light shined in Wang Dafa's eyes!

At the same time, he thought of Chu Mo's words: If the Azure Dragon Court can be destroyed someday, I hope older brother will help me.

“This is truly a rhythm in defiance of the natural order!” Wang Dafa couldn't help but suck in a cool breath.

His heart that was already silent for many years, for some unknown reason, it started to suddenly thump. His blood suddenly started to have a boiling sensation after being steady for many years!

“If you really can do it.....truly poke a hole in the heavens, then this old brother will help you make a spectacular scene. What’s the harm?” Wang Dafa squinted. He stood up and walked into a dark room. He wanted to put some things into motion at this time.

Since he wanted to help Chu Mo poke a hole in the heavens, there was no reason to let Chu Mo carry all the burden.

“I must follow and do something!” Wang Dafa mumbled, and his figure sunk into an underground tunnel.

Truly powerful businessmen have the courage to fight in the crucial moment!

.....

Chu Mo didn’t seem to walk fast, but his pace actually wasn’t slow either. He already strolled to the city gate.

The city gate had been closed for a long time by now, and the

guards at the gate watched Chu Mo approach. A yell suddenly came from far away: “The gate is already closed, return. Come back tomorrow morning if you want to leave the city!”

The city guards didn't recognize Chu Mo, but there was always someone wanting to leave the city in the middle of the night. Because of this, the city guards didn't care too much about Chu Mo.

Chu Mo laughed, then casually raised up a medallion: “I am General Fan Wudi's grandson. I must leave the city on a trip, please do me a favor.”

“Chu Mo? You are noble son Chu?” One of the city guards walked over to Chu Mo's side. He carefully sized up Chu Mo. Then he took the medallion and seriously inspected it.

Although the area was very peaceful now, opening the city gate was no small matter. As soon as a problem occurred, even the General of the city guard would suffer blame, let alone some ordinary guards.

The guard looked several times at the medallion, and he was immediately shocked. He respectfully handed the medallion back to Chu Mo, and then he said: “I am in charge here, please see forgiveness noble son Chu!”

The guard suddenly turned to a comrade at his side: “Open the small door. Let noble son Chu out!”

This person should be the small team's captain. After giving the command, several guards immediately opened up the city gate's small door, letting Chu Mo depart.

It was called a small door, but in reality, it was over ten feet high. There was a heavy noise when opening up the door. The door was incredibly thick because it acted as an entrance to the city, and it wouldn't break open even when using a battering ram.

Chu Mo thanked the several guards, and he directly left the city.

The small door was immediately closed. Some of the guards curiously asked: "Captain, even if he is General Fan's grandson.....isn't letting him out against the rules?"

The guard who received Chu Mo said in a low voice: "What do you know? The medallion he carried belonged to Marshal Fang!"

"Heavens.....he actually has Marshal Fang's medallion!"

"People with a high background aren't the same....."

"We would be happy to be a deputy General's pawn in this life....."

The group of city gate guards began discussing there. Working in this cold early spring night was certainly exhausting. It was very hard to find a topic that was good enough to talk about all night.

The group of people that followed Chu Mo in the night could hear everything clearly.

One of them sneered: “He had to use contacts to leave the city. He can’t even climb the walls. He’s just one person. I don’t think he has any tricks. Chase him!”

“These city walls are high, but they are nothing to us. We can come and go freely. Only someone from the secular world like him would think to use relationships to leave the city. I don’t know why he left the city, but we can’t allow him to flee!”

“Would he stroll out like this if he wanted to flee?”

“Idiot, he wants to confuse us. He will flee like mad as soon as he leaves the city!”

“Oh, is that possible?”

“How do we know without looking?”

A group of powerful sect members started to swoop out like falcons chasing a rabbit. Several climbed the high walls of Yellow Flame City and rushed outside.

After they left, they discovered Chu Mo disappeared without a trace.

One of them couldn't help but curse: "What a cunning little thing. What ambush? What tricks? There's not even a dog fart. He clearly wants to flee!"

"Chase!"

"If the group of us can't even catch one little thing, then we might as well die!"

The group of people faced outside the city and sped away.

The very first group of people to appear were almost all from the Azure Dragon Court. They were the greatest power near the city. The entire Azure Dragon continent was their domain. Ordinary people had absolutely no qualifications to compete with them here.

But in reality, was this really the case?

Not necessarily.

The group from the Azure Dragon Court disappeared to make chase. They weren't gone for long before a group of over a hundred figures started to pass over the ancient Yellow Flame City walls, disappearing into the vast darkness.

This group was from the Vermilion Bird continent!

Their movements were even faster than the Vermilion Bird Association's!

These.....were the ones who came for selfish reasons.

Each Vermilion Bird continent member wanted to grab Chu Mo first, so they could obtain the heritage for their sect. Because of this, they acted as soon as they heard the news, and this group from the Vermilion Bird continent was even faster acting than the Vermilion Bird Association.

Soon after, tens of people from the Vermilion Bird Association climbed over the walls, and they rushed outwards from the city.

Then several hundreds of figures emerged. This group was from the various sects on the Azure Dragon continent.

This was the biggest difference between the Azure Dragon Court and the Vermilion Bird Association!

The Azure Dragon Court members had extremely close relations with their supporting sects, but the first thing they considered, was the benefit to the Azure Dragon Court. Then they thought about benefiting their sect. When the Azure Dragon Court was first founded, this was the rule that was established.

The main reason was because of the Azure Dragon Court ruler. He was a hermit!

However, the Vermilion Bird Association president came from a sect!

Over a thousand people left from the eastern Yellow Flame City Gate. This continued all the way until the sunrise in the east smashed open the darkness shrouding the city.

Even the emperor was a little stunned when he received the news.

All kinds of activities were happening in Yellow Flame City recently. The emperor was naturally aware, being the most powerful secular world authority.

However, both sides kept a silent agreement of 'mind your own business.' Because of this, the emperor silently watched.

But he couldn't sit still after finding out Chu Mo used Fang Mingtong's medallion to leave the city. He sent out people to call over Fang Mingtong and Xu Zhongliang.

Chapter 149: Five Hundred Kilometer Pursuit

Fang Mingtong and Xu Zhongliang both slept peacefully the night before. This actually wasn't strange at all. Their thoughts were focused on the matters of the nation. They both cared very much about Chu Mo, but they couldn't send people out to watch the actions of Chu Mo every day.

So when they were both called by the emperor before dawn, the two were somewhat confused.

However, they both appeared shocked after the emperor explained last night's events.

"Your majesty, you're saying Chu Mo used the medallion I gave him to open up the city gate? Then over a thousand sect members chased in that direction?" Fang Mingtong's complexion became grave. The sixth rank, peak iron blood realm Marshal instinctively felt something wrong.

"My useless grandson seemed to hear about Chu Mo's news. It seems things aren't safe recently. There aren't any problems, but he shouldn't casually go outside....." Xu Zhongliang wrinkled his brow, and he softly spoke.

The emperor nodded: "I knew a little bit beforehand because of the Misty Palace Royal Academy."

“The heritage?” Fang Mingtong asked.

The emperor nodded: “Misty Palace used to be the number one sect on the Vermilion Bird continent. Its heritage is obviously extraordinary. There are countless people who want to obtain it.”

“Ai, it shouldn’t have been brought out!” Xu Zhongliang sighed.

The emperor bitterly smiled: “The heritage was already revealed! That’s the reason Chu Mo wanted to found the academy. I approved Chu Mo’s idea since it was already revealed, might as well completely reveal the heritage. Actually, so long as the present crisis can be endured, the future should be much easier to handle!”

Xu Zhongliang shook his head: “Impossible! Your majesty isn’t a member of the cultivating world, and doesn’t understand sect matters; however, you also know a sect’s power. Over a thousand men are chasing that single child.....how can he endure?”

Fang Mingtong sat there in silence for a moment. His eyes suddenly lit up, and he mumbled: “No.....not right.....”

“Old Fang, what’s not right?” The emperor was worried, even the ruler and his ministers could do nothing. He addressed Fang Mingtong the way he used to as the crown prince.

Fang Mingtong’s thoughts weren’t here, and he didn’t seem to hear anything strange at all. His pupils still flickered with light,

and he mumbled: “That boy’s realm isn’t especially high, but it isn’t low! If he wishes to secretly leave the city, then it shouldn’t be a problem!”

The emperor thought of the letter that Chu Mo sent last night, and he nodded: “He sent people to give me a letter last night. There wasn’t anything strange in the letter. He merely told me to gather medicine, then he said to wait a month. The medicine refinement can start when the materials are gathered.....that is to say, the boy already decided to leave the city last night? Moreover.....he wasn’t in a hurry?”

“That must be the case!” Fang Mingtong slapped his thigh. He said to the emperor: “Think about it your majesty. Chu Mo used my medallion to leave the city last night, and he casually used the gate to leave the city. Isn’t this him sending us a message? He is telling us that he left the city.”

Xu Zhongliang said: “Yes, if he really didn’t wish for us to know, then it would be incredibly hard to find out based on our people.”

The emperor nodded and said: “You all.....speak the truth! Our men discovered the tracks because the pursuing cultivators were in such large number, and they did so without any scruples. Otherwise, it wouldn’t be easy to track the people leaving the city.”

The emperor’s expression became somewhat somber after he spoke. He thought of the crown prince’s encounter. He gritted his teeth and said: “These detestable sect members, I want to establish the Misty Palace Royal Academy even faster now. The people inside can quickly mature, even if I have to pay a large price. I will

do it! One day, I won't be like I am now! I won't be held back by this group of people!"

Fang Mingtong and Xu Zhongliang both looked at each other, then seriously nodded at the same time. Fang Mingtong said in a low voice: "Right, this matter is even more important than a war with Da Qi!"

Xu Zhongliang said: "After we return, we will immediately push this matter forward. We will fight to establish the academy sooner!"

The emperor relaxed a breath: "Chu Mo holds all of the heritages. This matter ultimately relies on him. I hope.....he must endure through this calamity." The emperor bitterly smiled as he spoke: "I never thought, my Da Xia's future lies in the hands of a teenager."

Fang Mingtong quietly said: "This boy has a good master. I hope his master.....can appear this time!"

.....

Chu Mo started his footwork skill as soon as he left the city, belting along the road.

His footwork skill far exceeded that of any other in the world.

Because of this, a rank six golden stone realm cultivator would have a very tough time overtaking him, even though he was only at the fourth rank iron bone realm.

As such, the fact of him wanting to flee cemented even more.

If looking from on high in the sky, then the distance between Chu Mo and the group was about fifty kilometers apart. He was like a treasured horse at full gallop. The distance from Yellow Flame City.....also grew more and more!

There were over a thousand cultivators from the Azure Dragon continent and the Vermilion Bird continent at his back. They were dispersed into units, and they fought with all their might to chase after Chu Mo.

But the distance between the two became greater and greater.

The people chasing gradually became separated.

But neither side showed any intention of stopping from the beginning to the end. It was like a competition.

“How can this little bastard run so fast?”

“I heard that in Misty Palace, there was a footwork skill that only head disciples could cultivate. It was like a wind once set into motion, floating indefinitely. This little thing most likely cultivated that footwork skill!”

“If I cultivated this skill, then I could certainly use it even better.”

“Yes ah, if I encounter such a high grade footwork skill, I will cultivate it! Even if I have to abandon my old one and start all over!”

“Speak less nonsense. Overtake him and everything will be ours! Not just the footwork skill!”

The first tier of people quickly arose!

This group was from the Azure Dragon Court and the Vermilion Bird Association. There were also a few other sect leaders.

They didn't take notice when encountering each other. This wasn't the time to fight.

Wait until they caught up to Chu Mo and took the heritage. That was the time to act against each other.

These people believed that Chu Mo couldn't run too far. The most was a couple hundred kilometers.

He was only a teenager after all, even if he cultivated a strong footwork skill. How high could his realm be? The fourth rank iron bone.....was already the utmost limit!

They didn't even believe that Chu Mo could cultivate to the fourth realm, especially the people from the Vermilion Bird Association.

They lost a gold rank elder in Yellow Flame City, but they never believed his death had anything to do with Chu Mo.

In their opinion, the death was most likely due to the expert located in Da Xia's palace.

The reason for acting wasn't hard to guess. A foreign golden stone realm cultivator suddenly appeared in the nation's capital, and he started to act against a General's grandson. The General's grandson was also quite famous. Attracting the palace expert wasn't odd.

After all, the gold rank elder didn't show his status to the royal palace expert. Even if the elder did reveal his status, the Vermilion Bird Association could do nothing if the palace expert feigned ignorance!

The first fault lies with them after all.

They extended their reach too far!

But no one ever thought, this pursuit.....was five hundred kilometers!

Chapter 150: Fu Long

Five hundred kilometers ah!

This distance wasn't anything to the group of famous cultivators. The secular world even had cultivators who could travel a five hundred kilometers by day and four hundred kilometers by night.

But the problem was, the young Chu Mo shouldn't be counted among those secular world cultivators!

Moreover, after a while.....they couldn't even see Chu Mo's shadow!

That was to say, this group went on a long range hunt for over a five hundred kilometers, so the teenager must have run even further.

How was this possible?

"Did we pursue the wrong path?" The young man from Immortal Sky had the power of a fifth rank peak iron blood realm, but sweat could be seen on his forehead after running such a long distance. He breathed somewhat heavily as he looked over to elder Fu Long.

"Not possible." Elder Fu Long's expression was gloomy. A shadow flashed across his pupils, and he coldly said: "This path has traces of that little animal everywhere. It can't be wrong!"

“Yes ah, this little thing is simply too greasy!” Said elder Zhao Qing from the Heavenly Sword sect. He gnashed his teeth and said: “I really don’t know what footwork skill he cultivated? I’m not too familiar with the Misty Palace. Do any of you know? Why do I feel.....his footwork skill is more amazing than all the ones we’ve studied?”

“Is it just amazing? It’s several times more than amazing!” Guo Xing from the Golden Knife sect said. He looked to Fu Long: “Elder Fu Long, the peak level footwork skill at Immortal Sky.....it’s not this amazing right? We can’t even see the little brat’s shadow.”

Fu Long’s expression wasn’t too pleasant, yet he still nodded: “To reach this degree would be extremely difficult, even when the Immortal Sky’s top level footwork skill is cultivated by the greatest talent.”

Wan Zhi from the Raging Inferno sect glanced at Fu Long. He couldn’t help but say: “Such a boy.....is he really an Immortal Sky reject? Are the disciple standards of Immortal Sky so strict?”

Fu Long’s expression became even more unsightly. He stiffly said: “Perhaps he had a fortunate encounter.”

Zhao Qing said: “The Vermilion Bird Association, those bastards, they’re also relentlessly chasing. This little animal deserves to die. He’s truly acting recklessly! Wait until I grab him. I will teach him a lesson. I’ll let him know what is amazing!”

“Stop talking trash, chase!” A strong aura suddenly erupted from

Elder Fu Long. The degree increased nearly twice as much. Moreover, he rose high into the sky, and flew off into the distance.

“Understanding intent realm!” Zhao Qing was slightly shocked. He then bitterly smiled: “He’s worthy of being an advanced gold rank elder. This realm is truly not the same.”

Guo Xing watched elder Fu Long from behind. He mumbled: “Without reaching the understanding intent realm, thinking to fly through the sky is simply a lunatic’s dream!”

Wan Zhi watched the figure of Fu Long go farther and farther away: “I’m really jealous. Immortal Sky is worthy of being called the Azure Dragon continent’s number one sect. They’re truly talented. Entering the understanding intent realm from the golden stone realm is a true difficulty.”

This group of Azure Dragon Court gold rank elders, they were almost all at the sixth rank golden stone realm. The positions in their respective sects weren’t low, but they weren’t the highest either. Almost all of the understanding intent realm elders were in closed door training. They were attacking towards the higher realms.

Probably only the top level Immortal Sky sect was able to have understanding intent realm cultivators out walking the world.

The fifth rank iron blood cultivator from Immortal Sky listened to the gold rank elders with admiration. He couldn’t help but look arrogant. He secretly thought: ‘My Immortal Sky.....how could it

stop at the Azure Dragon continent's number one sect? We want to be the number one sect on all four continents! What Lonely City One Sword, Beyond Heaven Flying Immortal? What hermits? They will all be placed below our feet!'

As for elder Fu Long, would he merely stop at double the speed after soaring into the sky? He quickly outdistanced the others.

Hu!

An impure breath sprayed out of elder Fu Long's mouth.

An extremely frigid light appeared within his eyes.

He had different goals for Chu Mo than the others!

The other people mainly wanted Chu Mo's Misty Palace heritage. They really didn't care whether or not Chu Mo lived or died.

He's just a secular world youth, that's it. He merely found a rare opportunity, and he obtained the Misty Palace heritage. In the eyes of all these people, he was a three year old child walking through downtown while carrying a golden brick. He was simply seeking death!

People couldn't help but think about stealing, even those people who didn't know anything about the Misty Palace heritage.

After all, they only needed to pay a small price, and they could obtain an enormous profit that was hard to imagine.

They all understood, even if they weren't businessmen. This transaction was too good to let go!

Although, several people were suspicious. Why did Miao Yiniang, the original holder of the heritage, disappear without a trace? Did Chu Mo really carry the heritage? However, they watched the Misty Palace Royal Academy's construction spread like wildfire, and they also found out that Chu Mo was the academy leader. This information made them want to grab Chu Mo. They were determined to get the Misty Palace heritage.

This was the common thought among the thousand or so cultivators in pursuit.

But Fu Long was not the same!

He wanted to kill Chu Mo!

He and Zhao Hongzhi were like brothers. The two not only studied under the same master, but they were also neighbors before entering Immortal Sky!

They were men from the same town!

Fu Long and Zhao Hongzhi were born in the same small town. The Immortal Sky's first elder saw both of their natural talents,

and he brought them straight back to Immortal Sky.

The two were close as brothers after all these years.

No one else knew about Zhao Hongzhi stealing the wind dragon egg, but Fu Long knew!

They were originally both supposed to go, but Fu Long was delayed because something came up. Zhao Hongzhi decided to act alone.

Zhao Hongzhi nearly had an accident, and Fu Long felt responsible for a long time. He was always seeking an opportunity to repay Zhao Hongzhi.

Fu Long heard about Chu Mo attempting to enter Immortal Sky, as well as the disgrace that Chu Mo suffered. It was quite the uproar at the time. However, this was nothing to the Immortal Sky members. There was quickly nothing to talk about.

But Fu Long knew, Zhao Hongzhi was always upset about this matter. He even specifically sought out Fu Long, and he asked Fu Long if he was at fault.

“That teenager had extremely ordinary qualifications. If I showed favoritism.....and let a piece of trash enter, then I would have no way to explain! It wasn't just me who saw. His qualifications were not different than a regular commoner.”

“I was afraid about my past being revealed, but the problem was.....I absolutely couldn't take him!”

“Brother Fu, I'm really very conflicted. In fact.....I really wanted to kill him, and I wanted to kill his grandfather. That way, no one will ever know what happened back then! But I cannot act!”

Chapter 151: Too Calm

Fu Long very clearly remembered. When Zhao Hongzhi spoke, a complicated expression appeared on his face. His face was pale because of the pent up frustrations.

“Worthy brother Hongzhi, why do I sense something wrong with your health? Your Qi seems to be unstable?” Fu Long worriedly looked at Zhao Hongzhi.

Untable Qi was a joke to understanding intent realm experts.

But Fu Long knew, a person’s state of mind could have an extremely large effect. This was especially true at the understanding intent realm. Once the state of mind is influenced, it makes intentions unable to be realized. In this way, internal injuries aren’t able to be restrained.

Zhao Hongzhi’s present situation was clearly a case of this.

“Ai, recently because of this, I can’t sleep at night. One aspect is because I feel guilty. I’m sorry to my benefactor. Not only could I not accept his grandson into Immortal Sky, but I also have murderous intention towards him.....I’m not human! Another aspect, is that I’m very worried. What if they become furious, and make my secret public.....what do I do? Zhao Hongzhi unexpectedly spit out a mouthful of blood as he spoke.

Fu Long slapped his chest, and he made a pledge to Zhao Hongzhi. If there was a chance, then Fu Long would help kill Chu

Mo and his grandfather.

“Aren’t they two secular world people? You don’t have the heart, so I will do it for you brother! Are we not brothers?” Fu Long patted Zhao Hongzhi on the shoulder, and let him take care of his health.

Zhao Hongzhi’s eyes revealed a color of appreciation and hesitation: “Is this.....okay?”

“What’s not good? You ah, you are simply too honest and kind! You aren’t good in this way!” Fu Long remembered the shame on Zhao Hongzhi’s face back then.

Perhaps, Zhao Hongzhi felt that he made his brother into a bad person. Did he feel uncomfortable?

However, wasn’t this how brothers should act?

What was black and white?

What was truly right and wrong?

When it comes to brothers, these things were like floating clouds!

However, Fu Long was honestly too busy. He immediately had a new mission after promising Zhao Hongzhi. This delayed him for a very long time.

All the way up until the Misty Palace heritage appeared, and he arrived with a group of people at Yellow Flame City. He recalled Zhao Hongzhi mentioning that Chu Mo was from Yellow Flame City. He investigated, and he suddenly discovered the matter about the Misty Palace heritage. It was related to Chu Mo!

Because of this, Fu Long made a firm resolution: I must obtain Chu Mo's Misty Palace heritage, and I must remove my brother's troubles for good!

“After killing Chu Mo, I must find his grandfather. I'll kill them both!” Fu Long squinted his eyes, and he searched far away. He didn't believe a fourteen year old could run very far.

As expected, Fu Long saw Chu Mo just outside of 50km after flying for less than an hour. A little black dot was dashing like mad through a field.

“Whata boy! He's actually able to run this fast. Looks like.....the ability he cultivated is one unrivaled under the heavens. But, what does a little faster do? Isn't it still the same as kneeling before me?”

Fu Long looked back behind himself. There were no traces of anyone within a hundred kilometers.

Fu Long revealed a disdainful smile: “Everyone thinks they are high above, and able to look down on the secular world. Each one isn't even past the golden stone realm. Can they really look down on the secular world? If you really want to stand on the mountain

top and look down on the world.....then talk after reaching the understanding intent realm!”

Fu Long advanced towards Chu Mo as he spoke, and he enhanced the pace another level!

This time, he started burning the internal Yuan Qi to increase the capacity!

Chu Mo was just a rank three or four little brat. Even if Fu Long only had ten percent Yuan Qi left, he still had enough confidence to win!

Burning Yuan Qi can increase the power of exercises by more than six times, but the consumption amount was equally shocking.

Fu Long didn't dare act this way normally.

But now.....the little rank three or four brat, he already panicked and ran over 650 kilometers. How could he still be a threat?

Even if Fu Long only had ten or twenty percent Yuan Qi left, he was an understanding intent realm almighty!

Fu Long could casually make Chu Mo kneel when his realm was put on display!

The most important thing right now was time!

The Vermilion Bird Association may or may not have an understanding intent realm cultivator come over. Monopolizing the Misty Palace heritage wouldn't be that easy once the opposite party reacted. Rushing and taking the heritage before everyone else came was the best way.

Fu Long fixed his eyes on the little black dot off in the distance, and he burned his internal Yuan Qi like mad. His degree of intensity continuously accelerated. The wind blowing past his face even caused a slight sting.

This sensation made Fu Long indescribably delighted.

This was his first time doing this!

He even felt like the ruler of the world in this moment!

The feeling of being able to seize life and death was wonderful!

“Once I grab this little thing's top grade heritage, who knows how many top grade Yuan medicines I can exchange it for. I can refine pills, and my realm.....can increase to even higher levels! Comprehending intent.....intent of heaven.....one day I can become the sect master!”

Fu Long's eyes flickered with brilliant rays of light. Countless beautiful fantasies appeared.

He never sensed the figure above his head. Up in the higher skies, above a white cloud, there was a shadow figure quietly standing there. Cold and apathetic eyes stared down upon Fu Long.

Fifty kilometers.....twenty-five kilometers.....fifteen kilometers.....ten kilometers!

This continued all the way until the distance between the youth's figure was a couple hundred meters. Fu Long finally couldn't help but delight, he yelled: "Little thing, do you think you can really run away?"

The thin figure was running like mad. Once he heard the words, he paused his footsteps. He then stood there and turned around.

A young handsome face was revealed. His eyes lacked the slightest bit of fear. A small trace of a smile could even be seen.

You laughing ass!

Who knows why, but once Fu Long saw that young handsome face, a fire burned in his stomach.

He wanted to ruthlessly smack the teenager dozens of times. Fu Long wanted to smack his face until it looked like a hog, and then see whether or not he can still smile.

This was actually a little odd. Fu Long was an understanding intent realm almighty, and he would ordinarily never have such

feelings, especially towards a person who did him no personal injustice.

Even Fu Long himself felt a little baffled.

But he immediately thought, the origin lies within the teenager. Chu Mo was simply too calm when facing such an expert!

Normally speaking, shouldn't he be pissing his pants in terror? Shouldn't he immediately cry and kneel for mercy?

Fu Long couldn't help but remember last night's banquet. This teenager was humiliated by the group of cultivators, but his expression was calm from the beginning to the end. He was completely unlike a teenager.

When facing such humiliation, even a sixty year old man would have difficulty remaining calm. Don't even mention a hot-blooded impulsive teenager.

But actually, the teenager remained calm from the beginning to the end.

Even until now, in these desolate fields and mountains, more than five hundred kilometers from Yellow Flame City. A life and death crisis could occur at anytime.....and he was still this calm.

Based on what?

Why did he have the courage to be this calm? He acted too well!

“Boy, do you have any last words?” Fu Long’s pupils flashed with murderous intent.

Chapter 152: You've Been Cheated

“Last words? Me?” Chu Mo pointed at his own nose: “You’re certain it’s my last words?”

“Ha ha ha ha, if not you, then don’t tell me it’s mine?” Fu Long couldn’t help but laugh. He also couldn’t help but glance around at the same time. He sensed the surroundings, and then he finally relaxed.

He coldly eyed Chu Mo: “Little thing, to tell the truth, you really surprise me. Already at such a plight, at the end of the road.....and you can actually be so calm. Perhaps if I gave you time to mature, entering the understanding intent realm would be no problem for you!”

“I’ll accept your wish.” Chu Mo laughed quite happily through his teeth. Wasn’t receiving the enemy’s praise a type of success?

“Wish my ass!” Fu Long could no longer hold back. The grand understanding intent cultivator burst open into curses. He glared at Chu Mo: “Little thing, do you really think that you can leave here alive?”

Chu Mo looked surprised at Fu Long. The corner of his mouth twitched, and he calmly said: “I somewhat don’t understand. You all have fought so hard to chase me. Isn’t your goal the Misty Palace heritage? You should all go find Miao Yiniang. What good is seeking me? I am Miao Yiniang’s friend, and I initiated the Misty Palace Royal Academy. However, I don’t carry the heritage. What

are you chasing me for?”

“Little thing, do you think we are all idiots? Do you think we are retards? Would we chase you if you didn’t carry the heritage?” Fu Long coldly watched Chu Mo.

Chu Mo shrugged his shoulders: “Fine, given that the heritage is here, then you should only want the heritage. That’s it. I have done you no wrong, so why kill me?”

Fu Long darkly sneered: “Your words would have a slight effect if anyone else said them. You’re right, you’ve done us no wrong. We should only want the heritage, that’s it. There’s really no reason to kill you.”

“Right, that’s the way it is!” Chu Mo said.

“Then what are you running for?” Fu Long asked.

“I only wanted to take a stroll outside the city. You have all be chasing after my life, so of course I ran!” Cu Mo rolled his eyes in return.

Fu Long curled his lips: “Who are you deceiving? You dissapeared right after leaving the city!”

“Right, I was scared by all of you. Extremely terrified.” Chu Mo touched his chest and said: “Since you’ve already caught me, I will give you the heritage. You don’t have to kill me right?”

Fu Long said to Chu Mo: “There was really no reason to kill you originally. You’re just a secular world brat. Killing you is the same as crushing a bug, there’s no difference. But now you must die!”

“Why?” Chu Mo looked at Fu Long: “I haven’t provoked you? You were the one with a bad attitude towards me last night. I even wanted to join the Immortal Sky, but you all didn’t want me. You even humiliated me. I have plenty of reason to hate the Immortal Sky. What reason do you have to hate me?”

Chu Mo was indeed baffled, but he sensed this had something to do with seventh elder Zhao Hongzhi. However, there was still something that Chu Mo didn’t understand. He remembered his master giving Zhao Hongzhi a warning. As soon as something bad happened to Chu Mo, he certainly wouldn’t let Zhao Hongzhi go.

But why did Fu Long look like he must kill Chu Mo?

“The blame lies with you trying to join the Immortal Sky. A secular world teenager shouldn’t have any delusions of scaling the heavens. Can people like you enter sects?” Fu Long coldly spoke.

“Just because of this?” The corners of Chu Mo’s mouth twitched. He said to Fu Long: “You want to kill me because I tried entering a sect? Even if it is unreasonable.....didn’t you do the exact same?”

“You know too many secrets.” Fu Long calmly looked at Chu Mo: “Not only must you die, but your grandfather can’t live either. Soon I will find him and personally take his head.”

A fierce ice-cold light shined in Chu Mo's eyes. The smile on his face vanished, and he coldly said: "Did Zhao Hongzhi speak with you?"

"Not bad." Fu Long calmly spoke: "You'll be a ghost that understands!"

"Ha.....hah hah." Chu Mo couldn't help but coldly laugh.

"Why are you laughing?" Fu Long was a little baffled. He really hated the teenager's calm manner.

He was clearly trapped, yet he continued to play it cool. He was truly calm and not acting. He really didn't fear anything.

This really made Fu Long upset.

Except for a few abnormal people, the act of killing was already unpleasant to most. And so, killing a fearless person was even more disgusting.

At least, Elder Fu Long was upset to a certain degree.

Chu Mo looked over at Fu Long. He held a completely idiotic expression as he said: "I'm really curious. What exactly did Zhao Hongzhi tell you? What made you have the courage to run over here and wish to kill me? Do the two of you have a good

relationship?”

Fu Long coldly laughed: “We are brothers, completely inseparable! What do you know little thing? I would sacrifice myself for my brother. You know absolutely nothing about such things!”

“Right, I don’t understand. I only wish to know. Are you certain that you and Zhao Hongzhi are close?”

“Of course! We grew up together. We were both brought into the Immortal Sky by master. We cultivated together all along the way. How can a little baby brat like you understand?” Fu Long proudly spoke.

“Ai, I get it. Although I don’t like you, you really are a good man, but it’s a pity. The friend you made is really no good. If I wished to kill you today, then elder Fu Long, you would only be a foolish ghost!” Chu Mo said.

“You.....kill me?” Fu Long couldn’t believe as he looked at Chu Mo: “Little man, are you playing a joke with me?”

Fu Long couldn’t help but laugh as he spoke. Soon after, his expression changed, and he icily said: “Your time of death has arrived, and you’re still trying to sow dissent. You little demon, I don’t feel like wasting words with you. Hand over the Misty Palace heritage. I’ll make your pain quick!”

The understanding intent realm aura erupted out from Fu Long, like he was trying to pressure Chu Mo.

Upon first meeting, Fu Long felt that the teenager's realm already exceeded the Yuan Closure. He should have entered the fourth rank iron bone realm!

Such a teenager, you couldn't say he was mediocre trash even if you were blind. But Zhao Hongzhi had absolutely no reason to cheat him. After all, it wasn't just Zhao Hongzhi who saw Chu Mo's natural talent at that time.

But rather several people saw!

If Chu Mo was really a talent, then how could so many people not see?

But no matter what secret feeling he held, it was already unimportant.

He couldn't let this teenager continue living no matter what. He must die today.

The imposing power of the understanding intent realm can easily pressure an iron bone realm teenager. Fu Long didn't even exhaust his full power because of this.

But continuing on, he encountered something that he didn't understand.

The teenager was pressured so much that he should be kneeling, but he actually still stood there intact. Chu Mo was laughing and watching him.

“Elder Fu Long, you’ve been cheated, really.” Chu Mo laughed as he spoke. His tone was extremely sincere: “Zhao Hongzhi already came to assassinate my grandfather and me. He’s really afraid of everyone finding out that he stole the wind dragon egg. Therefore, after he drove me out of the Immortal Sky, he tested to see if I knew about those events. He came to Yellow Flame City in the first moment, and he tried to kill my grandfather. He didn’t tell you about this right?”

Chapter 153: Heart Like Ashes

“You speak nonsense!” Fu Long exploded on the spot. He denounced: “You speak lies without batting an eye at such a young age. No wonder Zhao Hongzhi said that he could never take you as a disciple. With your character, wouldn’t you still be terrible after entering Immortal Sky, and letting you study all of the advanced skills?”

“Ha ha, Zhao Hongzhi has good character? Didn’t he steal the wind dragon egg?” Chu Mo sneered at elder Fu Long: “You don’t believe my words, but didn’t you see how injured Zhao Hongzhi was with your own eyes?”

“How could a secular world mortal like you injure him? Clearly his heart is entangled in knots. He’s afraid of his past deeds being found out, but he also doesn’t want to kill his benefactor. An understanding intent cultivator can cause himself internal injuries when faced with such a matter. This is normal. I’m a seventh rank understanding intent realm. I clearly know more than you!” Elder Fu Long snapped.

“Not only are you blind, you’re also foolish! Can you really not pay attention?” Chu Mo looked flabbergasted at elder Fu Long: “How did you live to be so old? You being able to cultivate to the understanding intent realm is really a miracle. I can’t injure the understanding intent realm expert Zhao Hongzhi. Carefully think about it. I know your IQ deserves sympathy, but I believe you can figure it out.....”

“Figure what out?” Fu Long was incredibly furious inside, but he

couldn't stop making connections from Chu Mo's words.

Zhao Hongzhi really didn't appear in good condition when Fu Long saw him. But the two were close like brothers over the years. Fu Long never thought that Zhao Hongzhi would scheme against him.

“There exists a pill that can temporarily suppress physical injuries, not leaving any clues.” Chu Mo looked at elder Fu Long: “This kind of pill naturally doesn't exist in the secular world. Most small sects wouldn't even have it. However, a top ranked sect like the Immortal Sky shouldn't be lacking right?”

Fu Long's pupils flickered with rays of light, but he started to become silent.

“Think about it. If I was an ordinary talent, then how could I cultivate to the iron bone realm in less than a year?” Chu Mo somewhat pitifully looked at Elder Fu Long: “You should be able to see my current realm. It's at the fourth rank iron bone realm right? At my age, wouldn't I be considered a genius in the Immortal Sky?”

Elder Fu Long still maintained his silence. He didn't retort Chu Mo's words.

Chu Mo smiled: “This clearly illustrates my talent. I'm not ordinary at all. Your best brother Zhao Hongzhi has been spreading lies to you. I don't know why the others didn't say anything to you. Also, even though I'm talented, I could never

cultivate to this realm within a year, not without a good master. What do you think?”

“.....” Elder Fu Long maintained his silence, but he couldn’t help raising his head and speechlessly looking at Chu Mo.

He now suddenly had a feeling. This teenagers words.....were very likely true!

Otherwise, how could he be so calm? Chu Mo was facing his pressure, but why was he still so relaxed?

He left the city in the dead of night, and then he fled like mad. Everyone that wanted to kill him was drawn far away from Yellow Flame City, to a place five hundred kilometers away. Was he really fleeing for his life? Or did he deliberately draw these people here?

He originally didn’t believe that Chu Mo had any tricks to play. But elder Fu Long couldn’t stop his heart from trembling now.

He looked once again at the handsome and calm teenager’s face. He suddenly felt like shivering all over.

“Yes, looks like you’ve thought it through.” Chu Mo calmly said: “I don’t know why Zhao Hongzhi deceived you, but I can tell you the truth. When Zhao Hongzhi wanted to kill my grandfather, I asked my master to help me. My grandfather avoided danger because of this. My master didn’t think it worth killing a little man like Zhao Hongzhi, and so, he kicked Zhao Hongzhi flying away.

My master also gave him a warning at the time. If anything happened to me, then he wouldn't let Zhao Hongzhi go."

Fu Long said to Chu Mo: "Since it's this way, if I kill you, then won't he live better off?"

Chu Mo smiled and shook his head: "Elder Fu Long, let's make a bet. If you lose, then you have to be my servant from today on. You're only worth being a servant with such an IQ. If you win, then, you can take my life at any time."

"What gamble?" Elder Fu Long coldly watched Chu Mo.

Chu Mo said: "Go back to the Immortal Sky right now. If you can find Zhao Hongzhi, then I will have lost!"

"Just this simple?" Elder Fu Long almost didn't dare believe Chu Mo.

"Just this simple!" Chu Mo calmly looked at elder Fu Long: "So long as Zhao Hongzhi hears about the events in Yellow Flame City, he will hide away in the first moment. If he doesn't, then I have lost!"

Chu Mo thought a moment as he spoke, and then he said: "Of course, there is another way. You don't have to bet with me. Pretend you already died, that you died right here. Zhao Hongzhi won't even have suspicions, because he knows my master is much more powerful! He can easily crush you like a bug! Then send

someone that you trust to the Immortal Sky. See if he is still there. If he's there, then see what his reaction is when he hears you died."

"What does he gain by harming me?" Fu Long coldly spoke.

Chu Mo spread out his two hands: "You can't ask me this. I'm an outsider. How can I know your private matters? My guess is, his greatest goal is still taking out my grandfather and me. Ha ha, he will hide for a time, and then he will wait for the waves to settle. If my master stops in for a visit, then I'm afraid he will have all kinds of excuses lined up. He will say that there is a great rift between you two. He will say your actions were purely to cheat him, and so on....."

"Clever words....." Elder Fu Long lowly boomed, then he sneered: "Your words would be completely true if your master was here now. But the problem is, your master isn't here at all! Therefore, little man.....put away all your tricks!"

Fu Long thought to act against Chu Mo. He didn't want to listen anymore!

Chu Mo shook his head and sighed: "Look how pitiful you are. I really didn't want to kill you. Really, you are only a deceived little worm. Killing you doesn't make me happy in the slightest. Turn around and look."

Elder Fu Long instantly turned around, just about to coldly smile: "Do you still have any words?"

However, that smile froze in the corners of his mouth. An incredibly shocked light suddenly appeared in his eyes.

A dark robed man quietly stood behind him. He was less than thirty feet away. Elder Fu Long would have no time to prepare if the man wanted to act.

Fu Long was dumbstruck. His beardless face became ghastly. His voice started to quiver: “Who are you?”

The Demon Lord didn’t even look at Fu Long. He only said to Chu Mo: “What’s the point in wasting so many words with this retard?”

Chu Mo scratched his head: “My heart couldn’t bear to see him cheated this way.....”

“Do you want to see the brothers act against each other? That’s bad taste!” The Demon Lord sneered and cut off Chu Mo’s words. He directly uncovered Chu Mo’s intentions, right in front of Fu Long.

“Ai master, why did you have to tell?” Chu Mo awkwardly glanced at Fu Long: “Fine, that’s what I was thinking! The brothers would turn against each other, but Zhao Hongzhi doesn’t see elder Fu Long as a brother!”

“You keep saying that you’re brothers. I really wanted to see how

you reacted. The person you call a brother wanted to send you to your death.” Chu Mo calmly watched Fu Long.

Fu Long almost entirely believed Chu Mo’s words at this time.

This teenager was really no match for Fu Long, but he didn’t even have the courage to touch the teenager’s master!

Fu Long could sense it. The opponent could kill him countless times with just a single thought!

Fu Long’s heart turned to ash in but a moment.

Chapter 154: Sweeping Sword

Fu Long looked up and glanced at the Demon Lord. He spoke with a hoarse voice: “Kill me.”

The Demon Lord silently looked at elder Fu Long. He dully said: “You aren’t worthy.”

“Ha ha.....” Elder Fu Long sadly laughed: “It seems with my strength, I am still just a worm before you, not fit to be crushed by your hand.”

Chu Mo looked to elder Fu Long: “You don’t wish to find your brother and seek evidence? Perhaps I’m deceiving you.”

“There’s no evidence to find.” Elder Fu Long dejectedly spoke: “I would have never thought about it if you didn’t speak. And now that I’ve listened to you, I’ve thought everything over once more. I’ve decided that your words are false.”

“That’s all the more reason to find him! Go question him!” Chu Mo rolled his eyes: “What good is death? Are you going close your eyes, and and not do anything?”

The light in elder Fu Long’s eyes grew dim: “I don’t wish to act in that way.”

“How can you be such a coward!” Chu Mo raged: “You’re not taking any responsibility!”

“Because, I’ve always considered him my brother. I can die for my brother, but I don’t wish to be deceived by him. So long as I don’t meet him, I will feel that the two of you are possibly deceiving me.” A slight smile showed on the grave face of elder Fu Long. He then deeply looked at Chu Mo: “Having such a master is your good fortune. I believe that you can go in my place one day, and ask Hongzhi why he deceived me.....”

Fu Long only spoke the half the word ‘me.’ His two eyes suddenly bulged out of their sockets, and rigidly held open. Not a trace of unwavering could be seen in his eyes. There was only.....the ashes of death.

Nothing was sadder than a withered heart!

The corners of elder Fu Long’s mouth flowed with blood, and he thumped to the ground in front of Chu Mo.

He unexpectedly killed himself!

Chu Mo appeared dumbstruck. He didn’t think this would be the outcome.

After meeting him the first time last night, and all the way through this five hundred kilometer chase, elder Fu Long always appeared like he wanted to kill Chu Mo. Chu Mo couldn’t understand why he would end his own life.

After Chu Mo found out the reason why elder Fu Long wanted to kill him, Chu Mo wanted to make the two brothers fight to the death.

Because neither of them were good men!

In the end.....this understanding intent realm expert actually ended his own life!

He had so much courage and uprightness? And the greatest of characters?

Compared to Chu Mo's shock, the Demon Lord was completely unshaken. He calmly said: "He was unexpectedly an upright man."

"He died in such a way....." Chu Mo distractedly spoke.

"What were you expecting? An understanding intent realm expert is nothing in my eyes, but he is a top tier expert in this world. How could he easily become your servant?" The Demon Lord stared at Chu Mo: "Don't scheme this way in the future!"

Chu Mo's plotting had been seen right through. There was nothing to feel awkward about. The person who saw through him was his own master, and not some outsider.

"Do you still not understand why he wished to die?" The Demon Lord asked Chu Mo all of the sudden.

Chu Mo nodded: “Yes, granted that his closest brother sold him out, elder Fu Long’s heart was fatally wounded. But that doesn’t mean he should have committed suicide? At most he should have just flown far away, and never faced his brother again!”

“You speak lightly, but you should remember that seventh elder. Would he let Fu Long go?” The Demon Lord calmly said: “You’re still young. Although you’re clever, you still lack understanding about human nature. This man’s character was upright. And moreover..... he held brotherhood in the highest regard.”

“He wasn’t a match for seventh elder, and he knew too many of seventh elder’s secrets. Also, with his temperament, as soon as he met seventh elder, there was no way he could pretend nothing happened. The brothers would truly act against each other at that time.” The Demon Lord said to Chu Mo: “If Fu Long didn’t die, and instead flew far away, then that seventh elder would certainly become suspicious. He would certainly try to seek out and kill Fu Long, and then everything would be brought back to the beginning. He would still die!”

“What did ending his life accomplish? He ended up helping a bastard?” This was still hard for Chu Mo to understand.

“Will you let seventh elder live peacefully?” The Demon Lord asked Chu Mo.

“Of course not!” Chu Mo said with an iron conviction: “Not in the past, not now, and even more so in the future! How could I let

scum like him go? Although I don't like elder Fu Long in the slightest, it could be said, I really feel his death wasn't deserving!"

The Demon Lord looked at Elder Fu Long, who died while holding a grievance. He dully said: "Some people have such a temperament, just like this elder Fu Long. They would rather die.....than clash swords with their closest friend."

Chu Mo glanced at Fu Long, sighed, and then said: "Yes, if Xu 2fu ever sells me out in such a way, I'm afraid..... I might have the same thought as Fu Long."

The Demon Lord looked at Chu Mo: "That is to say, no matter when or where, you must be careful when making friends."

Chu Mo grinned wide: "I believe in my brother! 2fu and I have been true brothers since we were young."

The Demon Lord pointed at elder Fu Long: "He was the same."

"Can you not attack me in this way?" Chu Mo rolled his eyes and said.

"I only wish to sober you up a little. Brothers do require trust, but that doesn't mean your guard should be completely down." The Demon Lord looked at Chu Mo: "Perhaps, my point of view is a little extreme, but this relates to my past."

"I know you mean best for me." Chu Mo lightly sighed, then he

looked up to the Demon Lord: “I’ll bury him, right master?”

“Ah? I think you should send his corpse to seventh elder.” The Demon Lord plainly said.

“That scumbag is selfish to the bone. He wouldn’t bat an eye, even if we sent him the dead corpse of Elder Fu Long. He would even suspect that elder Fu Long sold betrayed him at death’s door. And wonder if Fu Long was forced to die.....” Chu Mo sighed as he spoke.

The Demon Lord looked at Chu Mo, and then he plainly said: “You have thought it through; however, you must consider. This person’s death now rests on your shoulders.”

“Would I care about that? In any case.....I must begin slaughtering from this point on. I don’t care about one more death on my shoulders.” Chu Mo sucked in a deep breath, and then softly spoke.

“Don’t blame me when you become the entire world’s enemy.” The Demon Lord quietly said.

“I never took the initiative to provoke anyone! I’ve always been honest. They don’t wish to let me go. Since this is the case, what’s the harm in become the entire world’s enemy?” Chu Mo calmly spoke: “The world of cultivation is brutal. Naturally I must raise the blade. I will sweep a sword through the heavens, but I do so with a clear conscious!”

The Demon Lord deeply looked over Chu Mo. A trace of approval was in his eyes.

Chu Mo slightly shook his head. They dug a deep pit in an extremely concealed location to the side, and they buried Fu Long's corpse inside.

Chu Mo didn't even touch the ring of elder Fu Long, which was clearly a storage device.

Because Chu Mo felt, such an unyielding and resolute man should be given the most basic respects. Although he was a little foolish, his death was unworthy.

The pit was dug very deep, and it was thoroughly concealed. After putting up some camouflage, he was convinced that no one would find it.

Chu Mo and the Demon Lord left this place soon after.

They went to a place about five kilometers away, where there was an enormous valley.

Chu Mo stood atop the peak, and he looked out far away. The first batch of pursuers were already chasing over. He gently sighed and took out Murdering Heaven, He slowly sat down, and then rested the blade on his knee. His pure eyes were both very calm.

The Demon Lord already quietly disappeared——

Chapter 155: Life Or Death Training

“He’s there! I see him!”

“That’s Chu Mo!”

“Right, it’s him!”

“I never imagined, he actually has the courage to wait for us?”

“Perhaps he has no place to run? Running such a distance must be really difficult for him. Group up, everyone be careful. We must not have a careless death.”

The first group of people was almost entire composed of Azure Dragon Court gold rank elders.

These people felt something was a little off, because they didn’t see the image of Fu Long.

“Why is elder Fu Long missing?”

“Could it be he took the wrong path? He lost the trail?” Someone said, taking joy in Fu Long’s misfortune.

“That’s very possible. Elder Fu Long was flying in the sky, and accidentally flew over” Someone suggested.

The Azure Dragon Court interior wasn't as unified as imagined, especially when facing such a large reward. Everyone wanted to bite a little more.

The Heavenly Sword sect elder Zhao Qing coldly peered across the valley. He sneered at the young figure on the other side: "Little boy, you're actually well versed in bluffing people. Who are you trying to intimidate by sitting there?"

The other people watching couldn't hold back their laughter.

Golden Knife sect's Guo Xing mocked: "This child has heard too many fantasy stories. He's displaying such a posture, appearing like an expert!"

Wan Zhi from the Raging Inferno sect said: "He can't believe that we are unable to cross the valley?"

"Ha ha, he probably believes that we must climb down the valley, and then climb back up. In this way, he has enough time to continue running." Zhao Qing mocked: "Just like the the city wall last night."

"Ha ha ha ha." Several people burst into laughter.

The course was over five hundred kilometers. Over a thousand people were chasing Chu Mo, and they were split into more than ten groups.

They had separated and pulled apart by large distances.

The few people present were talking cheerfully. The distance between them and the next closest group was over fifty kilometers.

“Okay, the people behind are still hastily chasing. We should first settle this matter and then talk later.” Zhao Qing appeared solemn. He faced Chu Mo, who was sitting cross-legged on the other stony hill, and yelled: “Little guy, prepare the heritage. Your grandfather Zhao is going to come and take it!”

The two sides of the valley were composed of brown colored stone. The valley appeared very desolate, but it also gave off a magnificent feeling.

The bottom of the deep valley was actually verdant and lush. Large tall trees grew everywhere, and it gave off a strong breath of life.

The valley was approximately three or four kilometers wide. Zhao Qing’s self-confident voice transferred to Chu Mo’s ears. Chu Mo faintly smiled: “Bring it on!”

“Little man, you’re clearly insane!” Zhao Qing said, and his figure soared into the air.

A rank six, peak golden stone realm cultivator could only fly long distances with great difficulty. But a distance of three or four

kilometers was no problem.

Once Zhao Qing moved, Guo Xing, Wan Zhi, and another five Azure Dragon Court experts followed.

In their eyes, Chu Mo was simply a shiny golden mountain!

And this golden mountain would soon belong to them!

These people could already imagine their future prospects, and their excitement was beyond words.

They were all sixth rank experts, but over the past several years, they had all experienced bitter hardships. They only had very few resources in hand, everything was used for cultivation.

A rank six cultivator was known as unhindered through the secular world. It was a high position able to obtain great wealth. But in the sects, this rank wasn't considered great. There were still many people stronger than them!

Who didn't want others to look up at them? Who didn't want to stand at the higher plateau and look down on the scenery?

Today, this opportunity finally came!

They knew quite well, they couldn't swallow the entire Misty Palace heritage. However, they would receive a great reward in the

end! At that time, the reward from the court master would be enough. They could rush towards the intent refinement state!

Whoever enters the intent refinement state will truly reach a higher level!

They will finally be considered true cultivators!

Zhao Qing couldn't help but scream in mid-air. His figure moved like flowing water, unequally smooth. He was like a fish in the river, a bird in the sky!

Guo Xing had to praise: "Brother Zhao looks like he's at the fringe of the intent refinement state. His martial art skill is a sight to behold."

Zhao Qing boasted: "Just a little ways away, that's it. I should be no more solid than brother Guo. You are only a half step away from the intent refinement state. Aren't I right?"

Wan Zhi said from the side: "For seven or eight years now, Brother Guo has been half a step away from the understanding intent realm. He must be only a little bit away now, and then he can make a true breakthrough!"

"Us brothers are actually almost all the same. There's no need to praise each other!" Guo Xing appeared excited, and he smiled as he spoke.

The other five Azure Dragon Court golden rank elders looked at the three men with envy.

They were golden rank elders, but their strength was still quite a distance away. Their position within the Azure Dragon Court was somewhat different.

However this didn't matter. Capturing Chu Mo and obtaining the Misty Palace Heritage would reward everyone!

Therefore, the court master would rain down rewards, and their share of the profits would be no less!

Chu Mo watched these men fly over, and an ice-cold light shined in his eyes.

They all look at me like a piece of meat. Does everyone want to take a bite?

Soon, you will all be pleasantly surprised!

Chu Mo slightly closed his eyes, and he started practicing the Heaven's Will My Will scripture. His heart instantly became serene.

His heart and mind were very clear. This was the first true test after becoming his master's apprentice!

The Demon Lord was still present, but he explained things very clearly with Chu Mo. He would suppress their realms, and make them inhibited to the fourth rank, which was the same as Chu Mo.

But he would absolutely not act to help!

This wasn't for just one or two, and not for eight to ten, but rather for all one thousand people!

Among them, just how many were experts with incredibly rich battle experience?

Even though they were all suppressed to the fourth realm, this was still a terrifying match for Chu Mo.

The Demon Lord also said, each battle may not necessarily be one on one.

Chu Mo knew quite well on the inside. His master wouldn't really let him sink into danger, but at the same time, not just anyone could withstand the pressure of facing over a thousand cultivators of the same realm.

“I must consider this.....a moment of life or death training!”

“I must break through this hurdle!”

“Otherwise, how can I go find Xiaoyu?”

Chu Mo abruptly opened his eyes. Sharp light shined from his two clear pupils.

Just at that time, Zhao Qing, Wan Zhi and Guo Xing all landed on the other side of the valley. They were no less than three hundred meters away from Chu Mo!

The five other gold rank Azure Dragon Court elders followed close behind, also landing there.

The five people quickly spread out, outflanking Chu Mo in a fan shape.

They were almost all certain that Chu Mo lacked any means of escape, but they were still quite cautious. They didn't want anything unforeseen to happen at the final step.

Zhao Qing looked at Chu Mo, and he calmly said: "Chu Mo, the time has already arrived, do you still wish to resist? To tell the truth, your display has already surprised me. I'm thinking of bringing you into the Azure Dragon Court. Hand over the Misty Palace Heritage. I'm being straightforward with you!"

As Chu Mo stared at Zhao Qing, an ice-cold light shined in his eyes: "You wish to kill me?"

Zhao Qing mocked: "Boy, how can you be so naive. You should sense it. The matter has already come this far. Who would let you

continue living?”

Chu Mo looked at Guo Xing and Wan Zhi, who were standing at Zhao Qing’s side.

They didn’t know why, but when Chu Mo’s vision swept across Guo Xing and Wan Zhi, they both had a feeling of horror.

Chapter 156: This Is A Big Trap!

How could they have such a strange feeling?

Guo Xing and Wan Zhi looked at each other. They both saw hesitation in the other party.

Chu Mo gave a toothy grin: “To tell the truth, is this the sect way? I’m a lone teenager. You all want to steal from me, and then kill me?”

“Perhaps if you were already seventy or eighty, I would really let you go with your life. But because you are a teenager.....” An ice-cold light shined in Zhao Qing’s pupils: “I must kill you! Otherwise, we will be the ones who die later on!”

“Well spoken.” A dull voice came from the empty sky above.

“Who?” Zhao Qing fiercely yelled. At the same time, he raised a fist and struck towards the empty sky.

A powerful force came crashing out. A fierce wave could be seen in the empty sky.

Boom!

A cracking sound immediately rippled through the sky.

However, nothing was hit.

Guo Xing and Wan Zhi immediately took up a defensive posture. Terror could be seen in both their eyes.

They didn't make a noise, but there was plenty of terror in their hearts!

Because they couldn't sense the position of the other party at all!

Just what realm was this person, that he was capable to this degree?

At this moment, they had the same feeling as facing the court ruler.

The Azure Dragon Court ruler was such an unfathomable expert!

But the court ruler was a hermit!

How could this General's grandson have anything to do with a hermit?

If the Misty Palace remnant knew a hermit, would she pass the heritage on to a teenager, and then hide herself away?

Yes, this was what these people finally decided from the rumors.

The Misty Palace remnant, Miao Yiniang, gave the heritage to Chu Mo because fear. Then she hid herself away.

Zhao Qing's complexion became extremely unsightly. He pulled out a long sword from his back.

Clang!

The long sword was pulled from its scabbard. Cold light gleamed off the blade.

Zhao Qing became a little more emboldened in his thoughts. He looked all around: "Who's there? Come out. Who do you think you're scaring by hiding?"

Whack!

A crisp sound suddenly came from the sky.

Zhao Qing was immediately smacked across the face, and it immediately started to become red and swollen.

But the most terrifying thing was.....there still wasn't even a shadow of a man!

"Rude thing. Die!" An indifferent voice sounded.

Soon after, Zhao Qing's body boomed with noise.....and fragmented into pieces!

He was completely broken apart!

The sword clattered to the ground, making a series of crisp noises.

A peak sixth rank expert.....a golden stone realm that was unhindered in the secular world, he died without a sound!

Chu Mo was slightly shocked. He couldn't help but mumble: "You said that you would let me practice....."

"This man deserved to die!" A chilling voice came from the sky: "I will leave the rest for you. I'll let you kill until you feel sick!"

"....." Guo Xing and Wan Zhi couldn't help but retreat back several steps. They had no way to suppress the cold air flowing down their backs. They were both completely shocked!

The other five golden stone realm experts surrounding Chu Mo were all completely dumbstruck. They looked at the original place of Zhao Qing, it was already turned into a pile of broken flesh. Even though they all killed several people in the past, and their hands were stained in blood, there was still an intense nausea.

“Practice.....this teenager drew us here, just so he could practice?” Wan Zhi and Guo Xing looked at each other. They could see the clear, intense horror in each other’s eyes.

This should have extremely angered them. However, after witnessing Zhao Qing’s miserable death, they could only think of retreating.

The events of today were simply too strange!

They were very aware of Zhao Qing’s true power. If fighting one on one, they wouldn’t dare say that they could beat Zhao Qing.

After this expert was mysteriously spanked, his body soon fragmented apart. He actually didn’t have the time to speak a word.

Just how strong was the opponent?

Even if it was the court ruler.....would he even be that strong?

At this moment, they considered the Misty Palace heritage as lost in the wind.

How could they protect their lives. The most crucial concern was to not die a mysterious death like Zhao Qing.

At this time, Wan Zhi and Guo Xing, as well as the other five

golden stone realm experts, they all felt a tyrannical matchless power. It directly enshrouded all of them.

“Don’t think of fleeing.” The indifferent voice dully sounded: “You all tried your hardest to chase my disciple. Not only were you going to steal from him, but you also wanted to kill him. Now that you’ve overtaken him, how can you think of fleeing?”

A bitter taste was in Guo Xing’s mouth. He miserably said: “Senior.....I think this is a misunderstanding.”

“Right right, senior, you misunderstand. We.....we were indeed greedy, but we didn’t want to kill noble son Chu!” Wan Zhi hurriedly spoke.

“Yes yes, senior, we never thought to kill. That was all Zhao Qing.....he was the one who wanted to kill. He already received the punishment that he deserved. Please let us go senior!” The five golden stone realm Azure Dragon court elders all quickly cried out.

They originally believed that this would be an enormous contribution. Who could have thought that this would be an enormous trap!

This was simply a pit that would bury them alive!

Who would have thought? A deity was hiding behind this secular world teenager!

“Misunderstanding? Stop with the nonsense. You have only one value now, and that is to give my disciple practice.” The dull voice came from the empty sky.

“Practice? Good good, that’s no problem. You wish us to compare notes with young Chu? We are willing, we are willing!” A gold rank elder loudly spoke.

“Compare notes? You are overthinking. What I want is a life and death battle!” The indifferent voice came from the empty sky.

“Ah?” The golden rank elder was immediately stunned. He mumbled: “But.....but young Chu’s realm, cough cough.....I don’t mean to look down on your disciple. What I’m saying is.....isn’t the difference in realms too great?”

The other people all foolishly stared. This was their first time facing such a wonderful situation.

The voice from the empty sky indifferently spoke: “Not a problem. I will suppress your realms to the same as my disciple.”

“.....” Wan Zhi, Guo Xing, and the five other experts all stared foolishly. The corners of their mouths began to sharply twitch.

“Good, start. Let’s begin with you two.” The indifferent voice from the sky spoke. At the same time, Wan Zhi and Guo Xing felt their Dantian regions become tied up and blocked by something. A severe pain followed, and the two couldn’t hold back a miserable

scream.

“Wimps!” The voice shouted from the sky.

Soon after, he icily spoke: “Begin!”

Wan Zhi and Guo Xing’s eyes filled with intense horror and dismay.

A rank four iron bone realm, how many years had it been since they experienced this realm’s power? They both forgot how this realm was.

The thing that terrified them the most, was the skill of the opposite party. He easily suppressed their realms to the fourth rank!

Moreover, they were at the middle of the fourth rank, which was the exact same as Chu Mo’s realm.

They could suppress their own realms to practice with the younger generations. However, the current suppression of their dantian was completely different from the other kind!

They could casually remove their self restrictions at any time. But now.....the two couldn’t help but try, and they sensed that there was no way to break the binds!

The court ruler definitely couldn't do this!

The two men had the same thought as the other five gold rank elders: 'How the fuck is this an easy task? This is clearly a big trap!'

Chapter 157: Nightmare

This was an incredibly large trap!

Chu Mo still sat there, the sword resting on his knee, calmly watching the others. Wan Zhi and Guo Xing both felt an impulse to curse the little bastard: “Fuck you and your giant trap! You have such a powerful master, why play innocent with us? Why pretend to be weak? Why pretend to be a secular world teenager? What kind of secular world teenager acts like you did?”

“I’ll count to two. If you all don’t act, then die.” The indifferent voice spoke from the sky, seeming to be a little impatient: “There’s still a pile of people waiting behind you! Hurry!”

Mother! You think this is a party? You want faster? Faster into death?

Wan Zhi’ thoughts felt like ten thousand ninth rank Yuan beasts were trampling across. He gnashed his teeth and said: “Senior..... the sword has no eyes.....”

“The hands are still put into action, so someone is ultimately responsible for life and death. If you have the ability to kill my disciple, then I’ll let you go!” The indifferent voice was full of self confidence.

Wan Zhi gritted: “Do you speak the truth Senior?”

“You still keep talking. Now I’ll kill you!” The indifferent voice sounded: “Two!”

“Wasn’t it count to two?”

Wan Zhi and Guo Xing were both in despair, but they could only gnash their teeth, and charge towards Chu Mo.

“Raging Inferno Incineration!” Wan Zhi roared. The long blade in his hand ruthlessly chopped towards Chu Mo.

A blisteringly hot sensation filled the air, appearing as a wave of heat.

This was a unique skill of the Raging Inferno sect!

Already pushed to such a plight, Wan Zhi was forced to throw caution to the wind. He could only gamble on the invisible mysterious figure being a man of his word.

Although his realm was rigidly forced to the middle of the fourth rank iron bone realm, he still had absolute confidence. He believed that he could chop Chu Mo down.

Even more so, at his side.....there was also Guo Xing of the Golden Knife sect.

“Radiant Golden Knife!” Guo Xing had the same thoughts as Wan

Zhi. Things had come this far. He could only fight for his life!

Radiant Golden Knife was a hidden trump card of the Golden Knife sect. It was already used to the fullest. Countless shining golden knife images appeared in the sky!

This made it incredibly hard to distinguish the real from the fake. When you found out which one was real, it was already time for the funeral!

The knife in Guo Xing's hand was a treasured blade. It shined with a golden light.

The two had their realms suppressed, but they held the incredibly abundant experience of golden stone realm experts. They both rushed towards Chu Mo at the same time!

“Raging Inferno Incineration.....Radiant Golden Knife.....do you see the moves of other people master? How mighty? You haven't even taught me the names of my moves! It's too deceiving!” Chu Mo spread out his arms like a large bird, and actually sailed up into the air. Murdering Heaven stroked a brilliant ray of light through the empty sky.

“One Blade!”

Chu Mo unpleasantly roared.

Up until this point, Chu Mo still only comprehended the first

move of this incomparably exquisite blade skill.

Only this One Blade!

He originally only superficially comprehended the first move, but now, Chu Mo understood the true essence of this first move.

He already attained the next level!

The blade was incredibly stunning when it slashed out!

Wan Zhi and Guo Xing both felt suffocated.

They fundamentally couldn't believe it, such a blade was actually exhibited by a teenager.

But Chu Mo completely lacked an imposing manner. He even looked a little sullen, but the two men didn't know whether to laugh or cry because of this "One Blade."

But continuing on.....there was no way for them to laugh!

Because this One Blade, it actually enshrouded both of them at the same time.

This was simply unreasonable!

Tyrannical beyond compare!

Fury surged up inside of Wan Zhi and Guo Xing.

They both thought: ‘You’re a teenager, facing us one vs. two. You actually dare make such a move against us two experts? Since this is the case, I’ll kill you. Your master won’t be able to say anything!’

Fury rose from the heart, and hatred was born in the guts.

The two used their unique skills, and they roared at the same time.

The Raging Inferno Incineration, Radiant Golden Knife, and Chu Mo’s One Blade all ruthlessly struck at the same time!

Qiang!

A booming noise filled the sky.

Breaking sword!

Breaking knife!

A dazzling light flashed across soon after. Two heads flew high into the sky!

Plop!

Plop!

Two headless bodies collapsed to the ground. Blood violently gushed out of their necks, immediately staining the soil red.

Chu Mo dropped from the sky at this time. He knelt onto the brown colored stone, opened up his mouth wide, and breathed heavily.

This One Blade was too amazing.

People even overlooked Chu Mo when he utilized One Blade, but he was no mere fourth rank teenager.

One Blade beheaded two men!

Even if the realms of Wan Zhi and Guo Xing were suppressed to the middle fourth rank, they both had far more experience than Chu Mo!

Because of this, even though the One Blade skill was exquisite and matchlessly powerful, that still wasn't enough to conceal the unsurpassable talent of Chu Mo!

Performing a move was amazing, but the person performing the move.....was even more amazing!

A burst of cool wind blew past. The other five Azure Dragon Court gold rank elders were stupefied. They simply couldn't believe their own eyes. Their minds were all an empty blank space.

One of the gold rank elders vigorously rubbed his eyes. He rigidly stared at the two headless corpses.

After a short period of time, when he completely confirmed this was actually real, the man let out an extremely miserable scream.....He then turned and ran!

Boom!

This gold rank elder's body exploded open with a bang.

It was just the same as Zhao Qing. He immediately turned into a disintegrated bloody mist, perishing in an instant!

“Wish to run?” The indifferent voice from the sky coldly snorted.

Soon after, the Demon Lord chided from the sky: “You killed these people efficiently, but you consumed an excessive amount of energy! How many can you kill in this way?”

“I know, but I couldn't resist. This One Blade.....I now comprehend it to such an extent, but I can only use it at this degree.” Chu Mo's breath had already stabilized. He slowly stood

up, looked at the two headless corpses, and silently shook his head.

The Demon Lord said from the empty sky: “This Hell.....cough cough, sword skill is really too overpowering. It’s impossible to fully understand at your current realm. But your talent is actually fantastic. At your realm, you can understand the essence of the first move, but there is no way to fully control it. In addition, your blade is also tyrannical. When your exercise and weapon is combined, to a certain extent, it creates such a phenomenon. So from now on, you must not use One Blade unless there is no other choice!”

‘How the hell does that make sense? Actually discriminating against his own disciple for killing too fast.....and consuming too much energy! Moreover, his disciple is no longer allowed to use One Blade! Does he disregard us so much?’ The four Azure Dragon Court gold rank elders wished to cry, but they had no tears. They already collapsed into insanity.

They were all self-proclaimed ruthless men. They were all the kind that killed without batting an eye. But after living to such an age, they had never seen a master chide their disciple in such a way.

Didn’t these Azure Dragon Court gold rank elders represent the Azure Dragon Court itself?

They also had the powerful support of the sects!

The Vermilion Bird Association group was behind. There were also the sect members from the Vermilion Bird Continent, as well as the Azure Dragon Continent sect members.

There were more than a thousand men all together. It was the combined strength of two continents.....don't dare say that it was the world's strongest, but it was a tremendous power that no sect could dare ignore. Yet they were actually completely ignored by the cultivator in the empty sky.

He considered them as punching bags for his disciple!

No.....not punching bags. That would overvalue their position. They were clearly a group of lambs for the slaughter!

After seeing the indifferent looking teenager kill two well known Azure Dragon Court elders, they didn't feel arrogant in the slightest.

They acted like this was very normal.....

But how the fuck could this be normal?

Where the hell did this terrifyingly evil master and disciple combo spawn from?

The four Azure Dragon Court gold rank elders began to tremble

all over. Combining all the dangers and nightmares that they encountered in the past.....it still wasn't as terrifying as today's encounter!

This was a hopeless situation.

They had absolutely no way to break out.

Chapter 158: So Simple?

“You all are next!” The indifferent voice in the sky spoke once again. The voice was like a magic sound pressuring them to death, making the four golden stone realm elders continuously tremble.

Within a day, their state of mind went from heaven to hell!

Now that things had come to such a state, there was nothing to be done now, even if they felt awful regret.

One of the gold rank elders said: “Us four together?”

The other three gold rank elders had almost the exact same expression.

This was completely shameless. Their faces would turn completely red on an ordinary day, but now, they suggested such a thing without the slightest hesitation.

They were faced with such an evil teenager, and they really had no confidence in fighting one on one.

Even though that teenager’s master already stated: Chu Mo can’t carelessly use that terrifying blade skill.

But did he say that Chu Mo couldn’t ever use it?

What happens if Chu Mo feels like he can't win the battle? And he releases that terrifying blade? They would have absolutely no way to escape!

Yes, even if they watched Chu Mo's move a hundred times, they still wouldn't have the confidence to receive such a blade.

Chu Mo's mouth twitched. Their four ages combined to almost two hundred years. He really wanted to say: You have no shame!

But after thinking it over, if his master wasn't at his side, Chu Mo was afraid the current situation would be completely reversed. He had to rely on powerful influences, just the same as them!

Thinking about it this way, Chu Mo didn't mock the thoughts of these men.

He only had one thought now. He must quickly become strong!

When his master leaves this world, and he can face these people with confidence, then that will be called true power!

"You four go together." Not waiting for the Demon Lord to speak, Chu Mo looked at the four Azure Dragon Court gold rank elders and calmly spoke.

"Boy, these are your own words!"

“You have sought this!”

“The sword has no eyes, don’t blame us when you get hurt!”

“Kill!”

The four gold rank elders were like wild beasts pushed into a corner, all showing their most ferocious side.

They faced Chu Mo and directly charged over.

“Torrential Needle!”

An Azure Dragon Court elder rushed straight towards Chu Mo. Hundreds of steel needles flew out from his hands.

The steel needles glimmered with a dull blue light, swarming like an angry beehive towards Chu Mo’s head!

At the same time, the air filled with a sickly sweet smell.

These steel needles.....were actually dipped in poison. Moreover, the poison was highly toxic!

An extremely ice-cold light shined in the Demon Lord’s eyes. In the past, he himself was chased by countless men that were trying to kill him. He sought refuge in the most remote corners of the

world, and he knew the darkness of human greed better than anyone.

Moreover, the Seven Demon Poison coursing through his body was also the work of his pursuers.

If he didn't take in a good disciple, he would probably be a part of the earth, dead a long time ago.

Because of this, the Demon Lord had incredibly sensitive instincts when it came to poison users.

The Demon Lord was considering if he should help Chu Mo or not, and just in that moment, the image of Chu Mo flashed. His whole body was like a mirage, and he directly avoided all of the poison-dipped needles!

“Good boy, good Phantom Wind Step!” The Demon Lord couldn't help but praise in his heart.

The Phantom Wind Step was a part of his heritage, and it was considered a top level skill in the Immortal World. Chu Mo couldn't bring out the true essence of the Phantom Wind Step, because he didn't have an Immortal's power. However, he understood a few abstractions of the footwork skill.

However, using the skill to the fullest in this world was equally magical!

This still wasn't over. Chu Mo waved his two arms through the empty sky, and in an instant, it was like over a hundred arms were moving at the same time!

He unexpectedly snatched up forty of these poison needles from the sky!

“One Thousand Hands!” The Demon Lord stared with large eyes, a little shocked at the sight. He mumbled: “I never imaged, this boy even cultivated One Thousand Hands.....even though it's only a small accomplishment, this is already considered a miracle!”

The other three gold rank elders, they clearly knew the ability of the elder that used Torrential Needle. All four rushed Chu Mo together, but the three others were a half step behind because of the skill.

However, Chu Mo elegantly avoided the attack, and he even stanced up forty poison-dipped needles, causing the complexion of the four elders to greatly change. They even thought to scatter in four directions!

“I'll give them to you.” Chu Mo coldly smiled. He flung the forty steel poison needles, and they made a sharp whistle as they flew towards these four men!

In the instant that the needles made a sharp whistling noise, a miserable scream could be heard as well!

A steel needle hit one right in between the eyes!

An eight inch steel needle was almost completely lodged inside the man's brow.

The cultivator collapsed on the spot after the miserable scream. His originally glowing face.....became a dim gray in that moment.

“What a potent poison!” Chu Mo couldn't help but be startled.

Soon after, three miserable screams followed.

The three other Azure Dragon Court elders were struck all over by the poison needles. These three pitiful gold rank elders didn't even have the chance to act, poisoned to death by their own comrade's needles.

The three gold rank elders all collapsed to the ground. Their faces, necks, hands.....and even their whole bodies turned jet black!

The severity of this poison was enough to make your hair stand on end.

Chu Mo foolishly stared. The corners of his mouth violently twitched, and he mumbled: “So simple?”

“Simple?” The Demon Lord coldly snorted from the sky: “You

think it's simple because of the exercises that you've cultivated. They far exceed the level of this world! The so-called martial studies is not only martial, but also studies!"

The Demon Lord dully said: "Martial, points to the beauty of the exercise; Study, yet points to the profound meaning of the exercise! The more profound an exercise is, the more powerful the control and domination. Comparing your exercises to theirs, it is like comparing a profound scholar with a man who has only been reading several days.....the two almost can't be compared at all."

Taking the lesson, Chu Mo nodded. Then he asked: "Master, do the exercises I study really have no name?"

"Of course they have names!" The Demon Lord plainly said: "Only I don't want you to be concerned by these things, so I don't wish to tell you. In this world of martial arts, the truth is, whose moves are more refined, whose moves are more lethal! This is the way of the four continents, but in the Spirit World, you will possess power at the spirit level. You will see, when you use these exercises, they will be completely different than on the four continents! This will be even more so on the Immortal World! Therefore, there is no big significance to knowing the names."

"There is meaning! Good or bad, I want to know what I study?" Chu Mo couldn't help but roll his eyes, looking stubborn.

"Since you really wish to know, there's no harm in telling you. However, when you get to the Immortal World, I'm afraid these are all secrets of the large sects. I don't want you to be influenced when you arrive." The Demon Lord calmly spoke.

Chu Mo instantly understood his master's concerns.

These exercises were the skills that his master's friends obtained in the ruins. They were all chased and killed by the large sects.

And now they were already the hidden secrets of other sects.

This was also why the Demon Lord once warned him about entering the Immortal World. Chu Mo will enter the Immortal world one day, and as soon as Chu Mo used one of these exercises, he was afraid that Chu Mo would be pursued to death.

Knowing too much can certainly be a distraction! This was the Demon Lord's apprehension.

After thinking these things through, Chu Mo smiled right away: "Don't worry master. These exercises are closely guarded secrets in other sects. But in the end, I want to let them shine in my hands!"

Chu Mo thought to himself: 'Because I have the jade!'

Chapter 159: The Eight Hell Blades

These were exercises that the Demon Lord mastered and understood. They were all powers that invoked fear in the Immortal World, but when these exercises were used on the four continents, not even the Demon Lord fully understood what kind of power they should have.

Therefore, the Demon Lord didn't foresee how powerful these exercises would be when Chu Mo used them. They held a mighty power that was several times stronger than what others cultivated.

Because of this, he could only smile at Chu Mo's bold words. He said: "I hope so!"

The Demon Lord said soon after: "The boxing skill you learned is called the Fist of Three Immortal Souls– Heaven, Earth, and Life."

"Fist of Three Immortal Souls?" Chu Mo slightly raised his brow.

The Demon Lord said: "Right, this boxing skill has three moves all together. The one you understand the essence of right now, should be the Life Fist."

Chu Mo's mouth twitched: "Seems like One Fist sounds better....."

"....." The Demon Lord didn't feel like indulging him. He continued saying: "The footwork skill that you learned is called the

Phantom Wind Step. This move is also top rated in the Immortal World! Once you cultivate Immortal's power, you will become a phantom when using it! When people see the image of this phantom, you will already be a hundred kilometers away!"

"This doesn't sound bad, actually a little interesting." Chu Mo grinned.

The Demon Lord continued speaking: "The skill that you just used to catch the poison needles, it is called One Thousand Hands. You were able to understand the obscure meanings of One Thousand Hands so quickly. It really startled me a little."

"Is this exercise very strong?" Chu Mo asked.

"Of course!" The Demon Lord said with extreme certainty: "One Thousand Hands, when used in the Immortal World, it is the Countless Poses! You can use countless arms for battle! What do you say, is it strong?"

"It sounds really strong!" Chu Mo eagerly said.

"It's already strong!" The Demon Lord couldn't help but roll his eyes. Then he said: "The blade skill you've cultivated, it is the strongest! I must say, this blade skill seems destined for you."

"What's it called?" Chu Mo asked.

"This blade skill is called the Eight Hell Blades. If you really want

to display the fear invoking power, then you must take advantage of a good blade. This sword skill is too overbearing. Normal treasured blades cannot support the mighty power. They will work well on the four continents, but at the Spirit World or Immortal World, normal treasured blades will most certainly break apart! However, your blade won't break." The Demon Lord said.

"Eight Hell Blades.....I like it!" Chu Mo chuckled.

"Right now you understand the first blade. It is called the Soul Stealer! A person's soul is split into the Three Immortal Souls, the Heaven, Earth, and Life Soul. The Heaven Soul rules over consciousness; the Earth Soul rules over emotions, and the Life Soul rules over a person's life span. When the Soul Stealer chops out, it stops a person's Three Immortal Souls. At the highest realm, this blade can kill before it even reaches the opponent's head!" The Demon Lord dully said: "Of course, you have to wait until after the Spirit World to reach such a realm."

The Demon Lord quietly spoke: "But since you already comprehend Soul Stealer's obscure meanings, even if you are on the four continents, this first blade's power is still enough to shock people!"

"Perhaps you haven't sensed it. When you use this blade, the opponent's reaction is a little slower than normal."

"Reactions are slightly slower in the midst of life and death, which is enough to decide victory!"

“Even more so, with the sharpness of the blade you carry, practically nothing can stop your strike.”

“Therefore, once you use Soul Stealer, people at the same realm.....even people at a realm higher cannot escape your blade. So much so, that people two realms higher.....might not necessarily come out ahead!” The Demon Lord lamented when he spoke to here. He relied on the Eight Hell Blades to move unhindered through the Immortal World. He once killed an almighty that was a realm and a half higher than himself!

“Spirit Stealer.....” Chu Mo mumbled. He recollected his opponent’s reaction when using One Blade. It was just like his master said. Once they saw the blade, the opponents seemed scared stiff. They lost their normal ability to react quickly.

The origin wasn’t because his One Blade was too fast.....but rather because of One Blade’s obscure meaning. It was a Soul Stealer!

“The second blade of the Eight Hell Blades is called Life Snatcher.” The Demon Lord said: “The so-called Life Snatcher kills all living things! This blade can be understood when you have enough murderous aura. You don’t have enough of a murderous aura right now, but I reckon that after this moment, you should be able to comprehend it.”

“The third move of the Eight Hell Blades is called the Soul Cutter!” The Demon Lord stepped out of the empty sky at this time, and he walked before Chu Mo. He said: “People have three Immortal Souls and Seven Mortal Souls. The Immortal Souls make

up the root of the Seven Mortal Souls. The Mortal Souls are the branches and leaves of the Immortal Souls. Life cannot exist without the Mortal Soul, and the Mortal Soul cannot exist without life. Therefore, the Soul Cutter is even more ruthless than the Soul Stealer and Life Snatcher! Take a large tree for instance, when you cut off all of its branches and leaves, you are only left with a bare tree trunk. Not only does it lose its ability to shelter, it also loses life force.”

“Master, did you use this move in the past?” Chu Mo asked the Demon Lord.

The Demon Lord’s face revealed a touch of remembrance. He said: “Back then I relied on the Eight Hell Blades, and finally climbed out of a mountain of corpses and an ocean of blood. It’s a pity, I didn’t have a blade as good as your’s.....otherwise, I would have killed even more dirty thieves!”

Chu Mo withdrew Murdering Heaven from the storage ring. He gently stroked the blade: “It’s called Murdering Heaven!”

“Murdering Heaven? What a good blade! It suits you!” The Demon Lord seldom praised Chu Mo in the past, but he wasn’t stingy with praises in this moment. He gazed with admiration at Murdering Heaven. However, there wasn’t the slightest bit of greed. The Demon Lord had seen too many greedy shameless men, and he hated these kinds of people the most. At the same time, the Demon Lord knew far better than others, just how hard it is to find a weapon that suits yourself.

The finding of Murdering Heaven was a godly opportunity. The

Demon Lord could only be happy for Chu Mo!

“The fourth of the Eight Hell Blades is called Nightmare. I’m afraid this blade must wait until you enter the Spirit World. Only then will you finally be able to understand a little bit, because this blade enters into the special technique category. You wouldn’t understand if I told you right now.” The Demon Lord said.

Chu Mo nodded, and he didn’t ask any details. He trusted his master’s words, because he said special technique, it already sounded like a supernatural skill. At the very least, he had never heard of anyone on the four continents possessing such an ability.

“The fifth blade is named Thundershock. The blade comes and goes with thunder, and it shines like lightning. The demons weep when it moves, and it’s said to be terrifying.” The Demon Lord spoke, and he thought of the men who died from this move. Several were famous almighties within the Immortal World, but their souls all perished under Thundershock.

“The sixth blade is named Purgatory.” The Demon Lord slightly smiled: “I don’t need to give you an explanation for this blade right? Once Purgatory goes out, everything becomes stuck in purgatory! No matter where your body is.....so long as this move is released, then you will be in purgatory!”

“The seventh blade is named Asura.” The Demon Lord said to Chu Mo: “This blade is already in the supernatural category. Not even your master can understand the obscure meaning of this blade’s essence. Therefore, it’s hard to tell you about its magnificent areas. In the future, you need to slowly grasp it

yourself.”

Chu Mo looked a little startled at the Demon Lord: “You still haven’t finished cultivating?”

The Demon Lord’s face turned red, and he immediately scolded: “What’s with your expression? Your master is also human! Not a god!”

“Cough cough.....” The corners of Chu Mo’s mouth twitched. He quietly mumbled: “In my opinion, master is the strongest!”

The Demon Lord grew warm hearted, and he continued saying: “The last of the Eight Hell Blades is called Godslayer. Your master hasn’t finished cultivating Asura, so don’t even mention Godslayer. But before I destroyed the Eight Hell Blades, I looked at this move’s description.”

The Demon Lord’s eyes shone with yearning as he spoke. He softly said: “When Godslayer is released.....the whole world grieves!”

Chapter 160: Advancing Into Waves Of People

Chu Mo's eyes shone with confusion. It was very hard to picture such a scene.....

Merely with one move, when Godslayer was released.....the whole world grieved. The current Chu Mo couldn't imagine such a situation!

The Demon Lord felt hurt as he said to Chu Mo: "One Thousand Hands, Fist of Three Immortal Souls, Phantom Wind Step, and the other exercises I taught you, they all came from my sect brothers' hands. At that time, everyone took what they could carry. As a result, my brothers and sisters all died at the hands of those large sects. This is the reason why those exercises fell into the hands of others. Fortunately before we left, we all shared the exercises. Each person memorized the exercises. And so, I was able to pass these on to you."

Chu Mo suddenly said: "So that's how it is."

The Demon Lord nodded, and he depressingly said: "But the Eight Hell Blades was different. The person who obtained the Eight Hell Blades back then, was an elder sister disciple. She.....always liked me."

Chu Mo looked at his still handsome master, and he didn't say anything. He thought that his master must be remembering that elder sister disciple. He didn't know how he should comfort his

master.

The Demon Lord softly sighed, then sadly smiled: “Therefore, after she saw me, she directly handed me this exercise, and she didn’t share it with anyone else. It seemed like a selfish action at that time. Yet, the Eight Hell Blades wasn’t obtained by the large sects. This could be considered turning misfortune into fortune.”

“The Eight Hell Blades.....only belong to us?” Chu Mo asked a little startled.

The Demon Lord said: “Right, only us master and disciple can use the Eight Hell Blades! Of course, there’s also the person who created the Eight Hell Blades.”

“Hasn’t that senior already departed?” Chu Mo asked.

“Not necessarily.” The Demon Lord replied: “That senior was an absolute talent. He must certainly be an unfathomable cultivator if he can make an exercise like the Eight Hell Blades. Perhaps he ascended from the Immortal World into the Heavens. This is also possible.”

“Ascend to the Heavens.....” Chu Mo’s eyes filled with anticipation. He thought: When can I reach such a realm?

The Demon Lord looked into the distance. He indifferently said: “Good, more men have come. Remember, it’s still hard to control Soul Stealer at your current realm. You must use it cautiously. In

fact, One Thousand Hands and the Fist of Three Immortal Souls are also extremely powerful! They should be enough for these men at the very least. You can raise your proficiency a little.”

Chu Mo nodded: “Okay, I understand master.”

The scene seemed to appear very normal. It was a master instructing his disciple, telling him how to fight.

But if the people in pursuit were standing here, they would probably cough up blood.

The figure of the Demon Lord flashed as he spoke, and he disappeared from Chu Mo’s eyes.

Chu Mo couldn’t help but mutter: “Is this Phantom Wind Step cultivated to the highest realm?”

The Demon Lord’s voice came from the empty sky: “Right.”

“Beautiful!” Chu Mo had to praise. He then looked up at the opposite side of the valley. There were about twenty shadows that were growing larger.

Chu Mo glanced at the several corpses nearby. He softly sighed in his heart. Greed is the original sin of man. This statement wasn’t wrong in the slightest. He believed that even if those men saw this ground of corpses, they still wouldn’t hesitate to charge over.

If only they knew the terrifying existence that was his master.

It's a pity that they didn't know.

“That boy is here!”

“Ha ha, finally we see him!”

“It seems like something is wrong. Weren't the Azure Dragon Court members ahead of us?”

“Look next to the boy.....there's several corpses!” One of the men finally became aware of the strangeness. He exclaimed and pointed at the several corpses next to Chu Mo.

“How is this possible? That boy isn't even a fifth rank cultivator. How could he kill an expert at the golden stone realm?” One of them was in disbelief.

At this time, all of the people looked over at an old woman in her seventies.

Her hair was already gray, but there weren't many wrinkles on her face. Her face was even rosy, like the complexion of a child. It was a pity that she had a pair of long crow's feet, making her look like an old woman, and even a little malicious.

The old woman capriciously stared at Chu Mo. Her eyelids slightly jumped. She snorted, yet didn't say anything. She carefully examined her opponent, and at the same time, she slightly closed her eyes.

The other people didn't dare speak at this time. They knew that she was using Spirit Sense to see if anyone else was present.

The only people that could use Spirit Sense, were those that entered the understanding intent realm!"

The other golden stone realm experts here could only envy to a certain degree.

The old woman was silent for a time. She slowly opened her eyes, and her face shone with exhaustion.

"How is it? Mother Po, did you see anything?" A person to the side asked.

"Yes ah, something feels a little off.....those Azure Dragon Court gold rank elders, they can't be considered top rank experts, but they weren't weak. None of them were lower than the golden stone realm. How could they strangely die at this boy's side?" One of the men expressed their worries.

The old woman named mother Qu was silent for a moment. Finally, she slowly said: "That place.....seems a little odd!"

“What’s odd?” The man next to the old woman asked.

Mother Qu squinted, and then she said: “That little thing must carry something strange!”

“What? What do you mean.....” The person next her looked confused.

Mother Qu coldly said: “All of those corpses appear dark all over. The skin has already become black. If I had to guess, that boy must certainly carry an extremely poisonous item! His actual strength isn’t anything worth considering. Most likely, he used flowery words to deceive the Azure Dragon Court gold rank elders, gaining their trust, and then he poisoned them.”

“This.....” One of the men frowned, pondered it over, and then seemed to sense that something wasn’t right.

“What? You think my analysis is wrong?” Mother Qu resentfully looked at the man.

“No, no, mother’s analysis is very reasonable! This should be right!” The man hurriedly spoke.

“The sky is clear and blue here. I just used Spirit Sense to check the valley. There are a few wild beast, but there are no other cultivators here!”

One of the men said at this time: “Did any of you bring something

to counter poison?”

Another man said: “I have a bottle of medicine than can cure several types of poison. Only this medicine.....” The person swallowed his own spit.

Mother Qu coldly said: “The medicine can’t be more valuable than your life! And certainly not more important than the Misty Palace heritage!”

The man submissively said: “Yes, mother’s lesson is extremely right.” He pulled out the bottle of medicine as he spoke, and he handed it over to mother Qu.

Mother Qu appeared extremely pleased with herself. This was one of the benefits of being strong!

The strong naturally have a higher position!

Even if others are completely unsatisfied, they still wouldn’t dare act rashly before mother Qu.

Chapter 161: No Way To Escape

Soon after, mother Qu took the bottle of poison antidote, and she distributed it amongst the crowd. There were truly quite a few pills in the bottle, at least thirty. After everyone was supplied with a pill, there was still ten left over.

Mother Qu wasn't greedy with the bottle of pills either. She returned it to the man, and she dully said: "Don't worry. We won't squander your pills. Wait until this matter concludes, and we return to the Vermilion Bird Association. I will personally fight to ensure the Association president gives you the proper reward!"

Two thirds of the pills had already been distributed out. The pain was real. After all, the materials to refine such a pill was extremely costly. Not even a golden stone realm expert could casually give it away.

Because of this, the forty year old golden stone realm expert became appreciative after hearing mother Qu's guarantee: "I must thank mother Qu in advance!"

"Everyone's goal is the same. The Azure Dragon Court members have all died, our chance has come!" Mother Qu looked at the crowd of people: "Therefore, we must unite as one! If any one of you dares scheme anything, you can't blame me for being rude!"

"Don't worry mother Qu, we all know the severity!"

"Yes mother, don't worry, we all take this seriously!"

These people all felt that since they carried the anti-poison pills, they could now sit back and relax. All of them held the expressions of victory.

Under the guidance of mother Qu, this group of people started to fly across the valley.

A distance of three or four kilometers was nothing to golden stone realm cultivators. It was almost the blink of an eye.

Mother Qu lead these people to the other side, and when they came before Chu Mo, they were all immediately startled. Because when they arrived, they discovered the two headless corpses, located at a place that was previously outside of their line of sight.

Some people immediately recognized the two corpses. They couldn't help but be startled: "These two men.....they should be the Golden Knife Sect Guo Xing, and the Raging Inferno Sect Wan Zhi. They were both peak golden stone realm cultivators!"

"That was the past. Their current realms should be incredibly close to the understanding intent realm. They could almost be considered almighties of the understanding intent realm. They were actually beheaded, dying here!" One of the men looked alarmed at Chu Mo.

Mother Qu also felt a little embarrassed. After all, she just swore there was no one else here. But these two headless corpses were a ruthless slap in the face. She never once believed that this empty-

handed teenager had the ability to cut the heads off of two peak golden stone realm cultivators.

Mother Qu looked with her crow-feet eyes at Chu Mo. She coldly asked: “Little animal, who killed them?”

“Old fart, are you talking to me?” Chu Mo struck back.

“You’re seeking death little animal!” The old woman enraged.

Chu Mo coldly smiled: “Old fart, have you come to kill me?”

“You think I don’t dare?” The old woman’s figure flashed. The understanding intent realm pressure exploded out right away. It was like a large mountain wanted to press down on Chu Mo.

Mother Qu was driven insane. That teenage brat was smaller than her grandchildren, and he actually dared curse her in front of this crowd. How many years had it been since someone cursed her?

She didn’t even think, why was this teenager completely unafraid in front of this crowd of strong cultivators?

Mother Qu raised up a hand, and she ruthlessly slapped towards Chu Mo’s face.

“Little animal, I’ll teach you to behave. A man must learn respect!”

Weng!

Mother Qu used thirty percent of her power with this slap. She was really afraid that one slap would kill Chu Mo.

She couldn't bear the responsibility if the Misty Palace Heritage was lost.

However, right when she was charging at Chu Mo, she suddenly felt a sharp pain in her Dantian.

"Ah!" Mother Qu painfully cried out. Her body was actually forced to the ground, and her eyes revealed extreme terror: "Senior.....have mercy!"

From this one point, it could be seen that Mother Qu was much more clever than the Azure Dragon Court elders. She didn't even question who the opposite party was. She only relied on the mysteriousness of the opposite party. By easily suppressing her Dantian and locking her realm, she quickly decided that the opposite party was far stronger than herself.

He was an unfathomably terrifying existence!

She finally understood why these Azure Dragon Court experts died. So she didn't have any deliberation, and she immediately begged for mercy.

Only it was a pity. The person she begged for mercy from, was the Demon Lord!

The Demon Lord who was pursued by countless people!

And now he saw his own disciple, being pursued by over a thousand men. Even if Chu Mo was soft, the Demon Lord's heart.....wouldn't budge in the slightest!

Chu Mo coldly smiled: "Old fart, go scram!"

He raised his hand into a fist!

Yes, this was no longer a fist, but the Life Fist!

Boom!

Chu Mo's fist ruthlessly struck into the old woman's face.

The old woman let out a miserable scream. Her body flew out horizontally, and she crashed far away into a brown colored stone.

Understanding intent realms have a powerful body. Her body broke the large stone into several pieces, sending gravel flying.

But at the same time, who knows how many of her bones snapped, and she fainted on the spot.

It can't be said that Chu Mo was much stronger than the woman. The old woman just didn't realize her strength would be instantly sealed. Under that state of panic, who would be prepared to fight back? There wasn't even any time to defend!

The strongest among this group of people, the understanding intent realm cultivator, couldn't even trade one blow.....and was knocked flying by Chu Mo!

Continuing on, Chu Mo didn't wait at all for the crowd's reaction. He directly rushed towards the group of people.

The Demon Lord didn't speak this time, and simply sealed the Dantians of all the people. The crowd of Vermilion Bird Association members, in this way, instantly dropped from the golden stone realm to the iron bone realm.

This sudden change left them with no time to react. In the blink of an eye, Chu Mo's heavy fist exploded onto five or six people, sending them flying out.

Two had especially bad luck, and were sent flying down the valley. This valley was at least ten thousand feet deep. Once they dropped, their bones would certainly smash into pieces. Their corpses probably couldn't even be found.

By the time the remaining men reacted and cried out, ten of the twenty men were already crippled.

The remaining ten looked endlessly terrified, letting out a frantic scream.

“What’s going on? My realm.....how could it suddenly drop to the iron bone realm?”

“My realm fell to the yuan closure.....” This person had even more bad luck. Because when the Demon Lord acted this time, he was a little carefree. He didn’t pay much mind when placing down the large seal.

Because of this, the cultivator that just stepped into the golden stone realm, suffered the same seal as the peak golden stone realm cultivators, and fell all the way into the yuan closure.

A yuan closure realm wasn’t the least bit concern for Chu Mo.

With one Life Fist, he sent the man flying, and then he turned towards the others.

“Quickly run!” One of the men finally reacted. This place was too scary. This teenager was like an evildoer. With empty hands, he actually had such terrifying military strength. If they stayed here, they would end up handicapped if not dead. There wasn’t the slightest bit of benefit!

The thing that made these men terrified from head to toe was, they had absolutely nowhere to run. Because apart from the valley

cliff, all of the other directions were completely sealed!

It was like an invisible enchantment was trapping them there!

Chapter 162: Evil Men Always Exist

They hadn't felt such a terrifying and helpless feeling in a long time.

Some of these men, had never even felt such a feeling.

People that could cultivate to the golden stone realm were already considered talents in this world. Their skills certainly wouldn't be lacking.

If the sect that they were in wasn't very large, then, they would be the most talented member of their sect.

All the while growing up, they had received all kinds of praise. And after entering the Vermilion Bird Association, they had a powerful backing.

Who would dare mistreat them?

They had never met such a person with this kind of ability!

And so, the originally high and mighty golden stone realm elders, they were all scared foolish. Their reactions were to an unbearable degree, and it even made Chu Mo a little stupefied.

Their realms were suppressed to the iron bone realm, but they shouldn't lose their ability to fight? How can I practice if you are

all like this?

These people would definitely curse if they could hear Chu Mo's thoughts: How about you try being suppressed two realms all of the sudden?

Actually if they really asked this, Chu Mo really had an answer for them.

Because the Demon Lord was already doing so!

And it was happening in that moment!

The Demon Lord was the master of these golden stone realm experts. After they were suppressed to the iron bone realm, everything became chaotic. They were cut down by Chu Mo in twos and threes.

This simply turned into a one-sided slaughter!

This kind of battle was no problem for Chu Mo. There was practically no pretense of training.

Because of this, the Demon Lord didn't even give warning. He suppressed Chu Mo's realm from the middle of the fourth, all the way down to when he just broke through the iron bone realm.

He didn't lower Chu Mo's realm level, but it was still equally

sudden!

Chu Mo didn't show any strange signs during the course of the battle. Actually, if this group was sensitive, they should have noticed: Chu Mo's attacks became a little weaker.

But the pitiful thing was, this group of people didn't sense anything at all.

They were like a group of thoughtless house flies. They were already completely trapped, but they lacked the fearful power of a trapped beast. Right after Chu Mo used his Life Fist on the second to last person, the final remaining golden stone expert suddenly recovered his realm!

Boom!

A tyrannical aura burst forth from this person.

He then raised a fist and struck towards Chu Mo's fist.

Separated by a gap of two realms, Chu Mo was easily struck flying, spraying out a mouthful of blood.

This golden stone realm expert didn't know what happened, but he knew that his power recovered. He was in ecstasy, and he rushed straight towards Chu Mo.

“Little animal.....die for me!”

Fear, dread, and helplessness mixed together into one sentiment, making the golden stone realm expert almost insane. His roar was earth-shattering.

Shua!

A blade light suddenly shined.

This was a dazzling brilliant light, like some type of magical power, making this golden stone realm expert scared foolish.

Soon after, his head soared through the air!

In the moment that his head soared through the air, his eyes were wide open, completely filled with disbelief.

How was this possible?

Haven't I already recovered my power? How could he still kill me?

Chu Mo's Soul Stealer cut into the golden stone realm expert that recovered his power. He was covered in sweat from head to toe. Chu Mo sat down on the stone without any grace, and he began to gasp for air. He mumbled: “Master.....could you not play around? I was almost sent into the pit of death by you.”

“Do you think that I’m the only person who can seal your Dantian? Who can suppress your realm?” The Demon Lord’s voice sounded from the empty sky: “There is no one like this on the four continents, but in the Spirit World, there is certainly such an expert! Someone like that could act against you for any reason. When you are fighting someone else, they could secretly use such a trick against you, and then you will certainly suffer!”

“If that is truly the case, then how do I avoid it?” Chu Mo scratched his head. When these Vermilion Bird Association members encountered this kind of trick, the expressions on their faces left a lingering fear in Chu Mo.

It can’t be said that the Vermilion Bird Association group was any weaker than the Azure Dragon Court, or that their mental quality was different. The Azure Dragon Court members were already aware of the trap. And so like trapped animals, they were able to exhibit fearful power.

But the Vermilion Bird Association members weren’t given any warning. They were suddenly tricked by the Demon Lord!

Both sides held extremely astonished expressions, which was normal.

This time, everyone wasn’t instantly dead. Especially when Chu Mo exploded a fist onto mother Qu, sending her flying, all within a breath.

They all watched with open eyes, as their brethren were struck down by this teenager in an extremely short time. The shock in their hearts was indescribably intense.

And now hearing Chu Mo speak with this invisible figure, they couldn't help but cough up another mouthful of blood.

This teenager lead them over a thousand miles, just so he could train!

We are almighties that can call the wind and summon the rain.....and we're actually being used to train a brat?

“Little animal.....kill me if you have the courage!” Mother Qu laid there, countless bones on her body were broken. Her face was weak, yet she yelled out ferociously.

Chu Mo looked over in mother Qu's direction. He said: “Don't speak, can't you see I'm learning?”

Pu!

Mother Qu sprayed out another mouthful of blood, and she passed out.

The Demon Lord finally continued speaking at this time: “Of course there is a way to avoid it, but, you still lack experience. I can teach you a way, but the power you have isn't suited. Right now, you've just witnessed for yourself, a sudden drop in strength is

disconcerting. I will pass on a way to protect your Dantian, after you study, it will be much easier.”

As the Demon Lord continued, he directly spoke a chant into Chu Mo’s mind. He said: “You only need to learn it during an opportune time. You won’t need to use it on the four continents. Moreover, this exercise requires at least Spirit power to master. Right now you have Yuan power, no matter if you have more, there still won’t be enough to use this exercise.”

Chu Mo silently remembered this chant. He smiled and asked: “Master, what else is there that I don’t know? Can you teach me everything?””

“One at a time.” The Demon Lord coldly spoke. “Don’t bite off more than you can chew. Could it be you don’t understand the logic?”

Chu Mo scratched his head: “I understand.”

“Understand yet still ask?”

“Fine, I won’t ask.”

“This place has already become unsuitable. The people behind will have even more unbearable displays.”

“Then where should we go?”

“To the other side of the valley!”

Chu Mo felt his body become light, and soar up into the sky. In the blink of an eye, he was already on the other side. He looked out far away. A large amount of people were fanning out, advancing in their direction

“The whole world is restless. Is the Misty Palace Heritage really worth so much?”

The Demon Lord stood beside Chu Mo, and he snorted: “You have exercises that far exceed this world. Naturally you look down upon it. But there are countless people who want the top grade heritage of this world. What do you think? If you kill all thousand of these men today, will there still be people scheming after you tomorrow!”

“Evil men always exist!” Chu Mo sighed. Little by little, his expression became even more determined.

Chapter 163: Taking The Initiative To Attack

“Right, master, how did you seal so many Dantians, precisely suppressing their realms?” Chu Mo asked.

“You must wait until the Spirit World for this method. Once you cultivate to the highest realm in the Spirit World, you will naturally be able to do it.” The Demon Lord plainly spoke: “This isn’t too difficult, it is a minor art after all.”

“Minor art?” Chu Mo was a little confused: “This terrifying skill.....is considered a minor art?”

“Of course, wait until you truly become strong. Will everyone sit back and let you seal them? Everyone has self-defense methods. There’s pretty much no way to seal someone who is around the same strength. And what is the point of sealing people that are several realms below?” The Demon Lord said.

“Cough cough, you speak the truth.” Chu Mo’s mouth twitched: “That is to say, the exercise you just taught me, it isn’t exactly the most profound thing?”

“It’s not considered profound, being ruined path in the Immortal World. But in the four continents and on the Spirit World, it is considered a high level exercise. At the very least, Spirit World almighties most likely cannot seal you if they wish.” The Demon Lord said.

“So that is the case.” Chu Mo appeared happy.

“You little demon.” The Demon Lord couldn’t help but curse. He sensed that this child still suspected him of not passing on the most profound exercises.

Chu Mo smiled, then suddenly asked: “Master, how many people can you seal at one time?”

The Demon Lord said: “If I was at my peak, I could easily seal all one thousand of these men, but now.....a few dozen at one time shouldn’t be a problem.”

Chu Mo said: “Then master, seal up everyone charging over! I want a true battle! I want true training!”

In the prior battle, three green stone in Chu Mo’s jade space sucked up a large amount of bloody spirit aura.

Chu Mo casually glanced within his jade space, all of the exercises that he placed inside received a slight change. Chu Mo already knew, the bloody spirit aura was a type of power source for the jade space.

He transcribed the chants for One Thousand Hands, Fist of Three Immortal Souls, Phantom Wind Step, and the Eight Hell Blades into written form, and then he placed them on the large green stone. When the energy accumulated, a slight change appeared on

these exercises.

This change made Chu Mo determined to collect even more bloody spirit aura!

“Are you certain?” The Demon Lord asked: “You might suffer a serious injury in this way. Even.....your life might come in danger! After all, while I am controlling the realms of these people, I might not have enough awareness to rescue you.”

“I’m certain! If it isn’t this way, then how will I truly mature?” Chu Mo looked far away at the oncoming figures. He earnestly said: “They have come to kill me. They haven’t come to make friends!”

“Good!” The Demon Lord’s voice was full of praise. At the same time, he faced the far-away group and flew off.

This time, the Demon Lord wanted to let the group have enough time to adapt.

His words naturally frightened Chu Mo. However, although the Demon Lord was far from completely recovering, he still had several types of supernatural powers.

He was able to suppress the realms of these people and pay attention to Chu Mo at the same time. It wasn’t the slightest problem!

But if he directly told Chu Mo this, then the meaning would be completely lost.

The Demon Lord was quite aware after experiencing several bloody battles. The only way to quickly mature was to fight desperately through mortal danger!

At least a hundred men were spread out over an enormous field. The power of the group was a little complex. There were golden stone and iron blood realm cultivators, and the lowest in strength was at the iron blood realm.

They were under an extremely vigorous bloody aura for a long time, invigorating the group of men. At the same time, they desired the Misty Palace Heritage, making them incredibly excited.

They clearly knew that the Azure Dragon Court and Vermilion Bird Association experts were up ahead, but these men still held hope in their hearts.

“What if.....they don’t find Chu Mo?”

What’s more, even if the Misty Palace heritage was only one of twelve.....it was still an enormous sum!

At the very least, it was still more than a mid-size sect’s entire heritage!

Even if Chu Mo was already captured, there was still no problem.

The meat couldn't be eaten, but the leftover soup could still be drunk. There was no problem right?

The Immortal Sky fifth rank iron blood realm youth was among the crowd.

His eyes flickered with a dull light. Elder Fu Long personally acted, and in his opinion, that boy had certainly no way to escape!

Perhaps when he caught up, that boy would already be dead. The heritage was likely already grabbed by elder Fu Long.

Therefore, he deliberately slowed down, and didn't exhaust all his energy. Otherwise, by using the poses of the Immortal Sky, his speed may not necessarily be slower than experts at the golden stone realm.

A group of Azure Dragon Court silver deacons and bronze stewards rallied at his side. They were almost all iron blood realm cultivators. This group was extremely respectful towards the youth.

“Senior brother Meng, do you think that elder Fu Long has already finished?”

“Do you even need to think about it? Elder Fu Long has already entered the understanding intent realm, and is a true almighty. When he personally acts, how could he not snatch a teenage brat?”

“Ha ha, we are truly blessed to have elder Fu Long.”

“Just like us having senior brother Meng! Ha ha, those with a large sect background are truly not the same!”

The youth from the Immortal Sky looked somewhat smug. His face revealed a modest smile. He was just about to say something, but he suddenly felt an intense pain in his Dantian.

“Ah!” Without any time to guard, he let out a miserable scream.

Soon after, all of the surrounding people were crying out in pain, and they stopped moving right away.

One person with a pale face said: “My.....my realm, how could it become the iron bone realm?”

“I’m the same!”

“I.....am also the same! I thought that it was only me. How could this be?”

“This place is strange!”

“Hiss.....I just broke into the iron blood realm. How could I suddenly drop back down. What is going on here?”

The group of men became unsightly. They looked at each other, and their eyes filled with terror.

The same thing was also developing in other places without stop.

The Demon Lord said that he could seal a couple dozen people at one time. He wasn't lying. When he acted, he really could only seal a couple dozen people each time. But the problem was, he could continuously act!

In the time that he was away, the Demon Lord hunted countless high-level Yuan beasts. He found several top grade Yuan medicines, and at the same time, he even encountered a Yuan stone ore vein!

For someone possessing Immortal class methods, finding a Yuan stone ore vein is no difficulty. Only on the past, the Demon Lord looked down upon them, and he had no intentions for it. Now his attitude has changed. After encountering the Yuan stone ore vein, the Demon Lord casually extracted the best Yuan stones.

He could absorb the Yuan stone energy into his Dantian in an extremely short time.

Therefore, although he could only seal forty or fifty people at once, he still had the ability to seal this entire group of one thousand men!

And so, this was exactly what the Demon Lord did.

At this time, countless screams sounded out within a hundred kilometer radius.

Several incredibly intelligent people were within. They thought to flee at the first moment that their Dantians were sealed.

Because they knew, they had encountered an incomprehensible being!

Only it was a pity. The great majority of people were in a state of panic, and they were ignorantly crying out.

The sun was setting in the west at this time, shining from the horizon, making the world a dim haze.

Chu Mo was like a ghost, passing through the forest towards the nearest group.....quietly closing in.

He was like a tiger preparing to catch its prey.

Chapter 164: Thinking Of Retreat

The youth from the Immortal Sky was the quickest to react. He was panicked in the moment that he dropped from the iron blood realm to the iron bone room, but he settled down very quickly.

Those from the top sects were truly abnormal.

And so, he very calmly looked around to the people at his side, and he commanded: “Enough! Why are you screaming? Does it change the outcome?”

Those people were already in extreme awe towards him, and in this moment, they were in urgent need of a backbone to stabilize their emotions.

“Brother Meng, your realm is also.....”

“I’m the same as you!” The young man icily spoke, then he looked to the others and said: “Right now, there are two possibilities that have brought about our current situation. First, there might be a terrifying expert in the vicinity. Although I’ve never heard of someone who can seal Dantians, that doesn’t mean the world is without such a person. Second, there may be something strange about this place. We can try and leave this place, and then see if there is any change.”

“Brother Meng is right. We should leave here and try!” Everyone else follow.

The young man nodded, leading the group of people to another place.

However, the outcome left them a little hopeless, because they encountered other people with the same panicked expression.

Even without asking, they could tell the other party encountered the same situation.

The young man's complexion became all the more gloomy. He hadn't even seen the opponent's shadow yet. Moreover, he didn't know why the opposite party acted.

At this time, one of the men from the unit suddenly said: "That Chu Mo.....isn't he at the fourth rank iron bone realm?"

"It's possible. In any case, he can't be past the middle of the fourth realm!" Someone said.

The youth from the Immortal Sky mumbled: "Could it be..... someone deliberately suppressed our realms to this level, and wants us to fight on equal terms with Chu Mo? This.....isn't this too ridiculous? Even if our realms are suppressed, there are over a thousand of us all together!"

"We should rally together!" A person from the newly encountered group said: "The current situation is far beyond what we expected. I think, it would be better for us to merge together!"

The youth from the Immortal Sky nodded: “You speak well; however, merging together creates a management problem. It could truly be dangerous if we don’t cooperate, and we could end up fighting each other.”

“This is simple. We all know that you are a big figure from the Immortal Sky. You also hold a high position in the Azure Dragon Court.” That person said: “We will all listen to your command!”

That person asked the others: “Brothers, what do you all think? Anyway, this is what I think!”

“We think the same. The youth from the Immortal Sky is trustworthy!”

“Right, everyone must unite at this time. We trust in the Immortal Sky reputation!”

There were several with dissenting opinions, but under such a situation, they didn’t open their mouths. And so the two groups combined, approximately seventy or eighty in total. They temporarily followed under the Immortal Sky youth.

“Brother Meng, what do we do now?” Someone next to the young man asked.

The young man looked to the crowd, and he gently asked: “Do you all think that there is still a chance to grab the heritage?”

A bitterness appeared in the face of these men. One of them said: “Are you joking around brother Meng? Our current situation has obviously been actioned by a great almighty. The opponent may not favor Chu Mo, but at the very least.....he doesn’t favor us. Are you still thinking about stealing the heritage while under such a situation? First think about how to protect your own life!”

The young man nodded: “I am thinking the same way. And so, we should return! I think that as soon as we leave, our problem will naturally resolve itself!”

There were several unsatisfied people among the crowd, raising different opinions.

“I feel this may not be so. That almighty is deliberately causing mischief. He is testing our patience and determination. Otherwise, if he really wanted to kill us, he would have directly acted. Why would he cause so much trouble?”

“Right, that almighty can easily seal us to the iron bone realm, naturally he could directly kill us. Since he hasn’t acted, that means there is room to maneuver here.”

“This old man is from the golden stone realm of power, and was suppressed to the iron bone realm in an instant. It feels like my power has been sealed by over half! If that senior wished to kill me, I’m afraid that one thought would be enough! Therefore, I feel that there is something deeper going on here.” An older man said.

There were seven or eight golden stone realm cultivators within the crowd. They didn't contest with the young Immortal Sky member for the leadership position earlier. First, they didn't want to offend the Immortal Sky, and second, they wanted to observe the situation.

Now they saw that the Immortal Sky youth wished to retreat, and they naturally felt resentful. Because from their viewpoint, no matter how strong Chu Mo was, he was merely at the iron bone realm. Even if he already entered the iron blood realm, there was still seventy or eighty of them, and hundreds were still behind.

With so many people, could it be that they can't beat one Chu Mo?

This was simply an enormous joke!

The Immortal Sky youth's complexion became a little unsightly. He wrinkled his brow, looked at the old golden stone realm cultivator, and said in a low voice: "Perhaps you don't feel any danger from this senior, but I feel completely enshrouded in danger! If you still wish to find Chu Mo, and can't forget the heritage, then please go off alone. Forgive this junior for not accompanying you."

At this time, the youth from the Immortal Sky didn't carry any more of his previous aggression towards Chu Mo. It was quite the opposite. He actually became very calm!

This was the kind of disciple that large sects raised.

While having the upper hand, they naturally revealed their wanton nature. But as soon as they encountered danger, they immediately became incredibly calm.

The older golden stone realm cultivator was slightly embarrassed. This youth spoke very politely despite coming from the Immortal Sky. But on the other hand, he was undoubtedly criticizing his intelligence.

Just when he was about to retort, suddenly, roar came from a far away location: “Chu Mo.....you.....”

Soon after, the roar came to a screeching halt!

It was like a rooster being strangled mid-crow.

The group was immediately startled, and they advanced in that direction to have a look.

But a few kilometers outside of the area, several people went mad, all rushing to one place.

“I saw Chu Mo! He has the heritage! Grab him brothers. The heritage will be ours!”

“It must be that this place is strange, and has sealed our realms. Good or bad, we are iron bone realm cultivators. Go.....grab Chu

Mo. That heritage is ours!”

“The Misty Palace heritage, it has exercises that are several times more powerful than the ones in our sect! Even if we only obtain one exercise, we will be rich!”

Following the roar, there were several dozens of people rushing to one place.

The Immortal Sky youth was like the others. After a breath’s time.....he became urgent!

Chapter 165: True Test

These people all thought to retreat before, primarily because they were intimidated!

Their Dantians were suddenly sealed, causing their realms to tumble. If someone could maintain their state of mind at this moment, then they weren't human.....they were a god!

Actually, a god might not even be able to entirely maintain their state of mind.

While under the terror, the thought to retreat was normal.

But now, Chu Mo suddenly appeared. The exact person that they were chasing to death. He was also being surrounded by others right now. To say they weren't tempted would be a lie.

If Chu Mo was really grabbed by that surrounding group, and the heritage obtained, then these men would certainly feel regret!

At this time, everyone's gaze rested on the young man from the Immortal Sky. The group of golden stone realm experts were getting restless, and they were just shy of rushing out.

The youth from the Immortal Sky muttered to himself, and then suddenly blurted: "The Misty Palace.....back then it was no inferior to my Immortal Sky sect. If it can compare to the heritage of the Immortal Sky, then one twelfth.....would have over ten

thousand books!”

As he spoke, he looked at the people to his side, saying: “We are less than a hundred men, but we are a powerful force! When colliding with another force.....we can’t lose.”

“Does elder brother Meng mean?” A silver deacon from the Azure Dragon Court seemed to understand the young man’s thoughts.

The young man’s voice became ice-cold: “If we divide this ten thousand book heritage equally, then each person.....should have over a thousand books!”

Everyone’s breath became urgent. Looking at the man from the Immortal Sky, they all began to stir.

The several golden stone realm experts couldn’t help but reveal a deep thought.

Right, this place already became total chaos.

Those prior Azure Dragon Court and Vermilion Bird Association members were gone without a trace. Their realms were suppressed, and had all fallen to the iron bone realm. And so.....could the Azure Dragon Court and Vermilion Bird Association members that were up ahead have died already?

If that was the case, then these men were the strongest force still chasing.

They were all starting to gain a backbone like the Immortal Sky disciple.

The other groups could temporarily band together, forming a mob, but they would still be unorganized!

“Therefore.....” The handsome young man from the Immortal Sky showed a ferocious smile: “We shouldn’t act against Chu Mo first.....only make sure he doesn’t run. We can kill the others! For instance, those from the Vermilion Bird continent! They.....are our enemies! They have traveled tens of thousands of kilometers, stretching out their hands to our Azure Dragon continent.....isn’t this a little too shameless?”

“Yes ah, this is too much! This is simply shameless! I already wanted to teach them a lesson!”

“Right, the time has come. The Vermilion Bird Association and Vermilion Bird continent sects have gathered, and we have words to say!”

These seventy to eighty men were either from the Azure Dragon Court or the Azure Dragon Continent. At this moment, they could form an alliance in a very short amount of time.

“Good, we will first kill the group from the Vermilion Bird continent!” Ice-cold murderous intent flashed across the eyes of the young man from the Immortal Sky.

Soon after, these seventy to eighty men advanced towards the direction where Chu Mo appeared.

The group attacking Chu Mo was from the Vermilion Bird Association!

Chu Mo had just begun to act, taking out three or four opponents.

The group's reaction was quite unpleasant, but because they were ambushed by Chu Mo, they suffered heavy losses right away. They were furious, and they looked at Chu Mo like he was a glittering gold mountain. Greedy instincts took over any logic.

Chu Mo finally felt the taste of a tough battle!

This group wasn't like the two previous ones. They never saw the Demon Lord. Their realms were suppressed, but they weren't afraid at all. Moreover, they weren't like the gold rank elder from the Vermilion Bird Association. They weren't under the surprised state of getting their Dantians sealed.

Chu Mo acted straight away. Although it truly couldn't be considered a sneak attack, his actions still caught the group off guard.

The group was already through the initial stages of panic, and had already begun to adapt. Most importantly, their original realms were almost all at the iron blood realm. The iron bone realm was still fresh in their minds, and they were quite familiar with the power.

Even though their realms were suppressed in an instant, they could still put out extremely powerful combat strength, because they had already gone through the initial stages of panic, and greed had taken over.

Chu Mo mastered exercises that far exceeded those of this world, possessed an extremely formidable physique, and could be considered unequaled at the same realm. However, when facing so many insane experts at the same realm, he began to feel the strain right away.

However, this was the only way to excite all of his latent ability!

Chu Mo struck out with One Thousand Hands, increasing the degree of variations. His opponents began decreasing one by one.

Bloody Spirit Aura flew towards the jade on Chu Mo.

Yet at the same time, there were many wounds on Chu Mo's body. Several injuries were severe, and even the bones could be seen.

The blood quickly dyed Chu Mo's clothes red.

But Chu Mo, was like he didn't feel anything at all. Vengeful light shined in his eyes, and he was like an enraged tiger, pouncing left and right. Every touch of his fist killed or critically wounded.

Only the encirclement grew larger and larger.

Several people heard the activity, and they all rushed towards that direction like a swarm of bees.

Was the young man from the Immortal Sky the sole person with greedy eyes?

At this moment, the sunset already fell upon this piece of land, and the sky had become dim.

But the murderous cries were yet thundering the heavens!

"How can this guy fight so well? Is he really at the iron bone realm? Why do I feel like he is at the golden stone realm?"

"Grandma! I cut into his shoulder. The treasured blade that I refined over a hundred times fell into ruins. His shoulder is still

completely intact, without any damage. Are his bones made of steel that has been tempered countless times?”

“Ai’you.....it pains me to death! My arm was cut off by one strike.....ah, my arm!”

All kinds of snarls, growls, and roars broke out one after another.

Chu Mo gathered more and more injuries. He could clearly count, the number of slain had already reached twenty!

These were real deal opponents at the same realm!

Moreover, they used the greatest power that could be mustered at this realm!

So far, Chu Mo already used up one tenth of his power!

Although he didn’t feel especially exhausted, Chu Mo had a very clear thought: If this continues, then, even if he uses up all of his strength.....at most he could only kill two hundred opponents.

There would still be eight hundred more men.....all completely insane like these men. He would certainly be powerless!

“Looks like master was right. I burn up too much of my power, lacking control. I thought that I was being efficient, but in reality, it’s extremely wasteful! I must think of a way to use the smallest

amount of power, to bring about the greatest force!" Chu Mo thought.

And at this time, the situation suddenly changed!

Chapter 166: Fatal Attack

“Argh! You... you ambushed me!”

“Damn it... who gashed me?”

“I’m not Chu Mo! Why are you attacking me?”

“Not good... those Azure Dragon court’s bastards are attacking us!”

The crowd turned into disarray as they started squeezing and pushing with all their might to attack Chu Mo. In this chaos, and in their fury; with a roar, they began to attack people beside them.

Chu Mo’s once panicked mind immediately started to calm down at the sight. However, once Chu Mo sensed the current peculiar situation, he couldn’t help but have the thought: “Why are they fighting against each other? Do they believe that it’s already time to split their spoils?”

Almost immediately, Chu Mo understood what was going on, Azure Dragon Court and Vermillion Bird Association were in conflict with each other.

Two great continents, separated by the great mountains, minding their own welfare and never interfering with one another.

Yet, the great heritage from the Misty Palace had gathered this crowd in the land of Azure Dragon Court.

Azure Dragon Court's people thought that the Vermillion Bird Association had gone too far, to even intrude their land and rob from them.

Vermillion Bird Association just want to take what's belongs to them, what rights do Azure Dragon Court's people have to get in their way?

If both sides get along well under such mentality, it would have had to be the work of a higher being.

BANG!

With a Fist of Three Immortal Souls, Chu Mo smashed the head of the one who tried to attack him from the back. He then manipulated the Phantom Wind Step to another man, he grabbed the man's sword by hurling his One Thousand Hands towards the man, then he slit the man's throat to death.

BANG!

The sword with a sphere of severity, slashed towards Chu Mo's back like the roaring falls under the evening twilight. Yet, even this, was halted by Chu Mo's sword which was the cause of that earlier loud bang.

The whole situation was in total chaos!

At the start, seventy to eighty men from the Immortal Sky led by the young man attacked the Vermillion Bird Associates. Not before long, three to four hundred men from Azure Dragon Court attacked those men from the Vermillion Bird Association.

Soon, an internal conflict arose between Azure Dragon Court.

Azure Dragon Court possessed a vast land; therefore, it was impossible to know each and every one of their own. From the initial accidental injuries to apparent kills at the end, until the night fell, the place was littered in tons and tons of blood.

Everyone seemed to forget about their sealed dantian, reduced realm, and the existence of a high power under the shadow. Everyone began attacking one another insanely.

From their perspective, no matter how powerful Chu Mo is, he is after all fighting alone!

Once finishing the purge of any other potential threats then going back to deal with Chu Mo, it should not have any problems at all.

Their motives were well thought, but the problem is... how could Chu Mo possibly grant them this opportunity?

Chu Mo kept calculating the possibility to release soul-stirring

power with minimum strength. He manipulated skills like Fist of Three Immortal Souls and One Thousand Hands repeatedly towards enemies.

As the saying goes: Practice makes perfect!

Don't underestimate the strength of the three laws of fist, Sky, Earth, and Immortal combat skills, each technique has diversified force that contains infinite power!

Chu Mo repeatedly manipulates the Fist of Three Immortal Souls, until he finally figures out on how to use minimum internal strength to control the impactable power.

BANG, BANG, BANG!

One after another solid punches hit on those who rush towards him.

With each punch he collects Bloody Spirit Aura.

Chu Mo's eyes gradually became red!

Up till this moment, there were no more strands of morality allowed in this massacre. This was a war for the strong. A terrible war!

Chu Mo was not involved in any sects or associations. However,

due to this war, practically seventy percent of sects and associations in the land of Azure Dragon and Vermillion Bird had enmity involved with him.

Many new wounds simultaneously appeared on Chu Mo's body which required him to intake a healing pill to suppress his injuries.

Luckily, the healing pill produced by the great Lazurite alchemist were renowned as the most effective alchemical pills with the highest potency. The active potency of the medicine, plus Chu Mo's internal capabilities, through a continuous bloodbath of Yuan beasts, he is near to the sixth realm. Which in Four Wonders Land, it is called the adamantine body.

The average sword may have left an open wound on his skin, yet it hardly hurt his bones. This is what allowed him to still be standing at this moment.

Even so, several grave wounds were bleeding ferociously out of Chu Mo's body.

Covered with cold sweats, Chu Mo clenched his teeth, enduring the excruciating pain from those injuries. His eyes were filled with murderous intentions and endless wrath!

Finally, after reaping away one hundred and thirty plus souls, Chu Mo felt a little unbearable.

It's not because of his running out strength, it is the increasing

wounds that are unbearable... Even if there's no fatal injury, but with this many wounds adding together, it is destructive to his body.

Layers of conflicts and massacres between the continents of Azure Dragon and Vermillion bird prolonged his surviving chance.

Until this moment, Chu Mo finally had some understandings about the feelings of his master whom claimed he had murdered his way out from a mountain full of corpses and a sea filled with blood.

Anger, fear, despair... these emotions were now experienced by Chu Mo. Although he knew his Master would rescue him, he knew better, under these circumstances, that even if it was his Master, he might not be able to handle a sudden attack.

Moreover, Chu Mo has no clue of his Master's whereabouts.

Because the moment when this crowd approached him and started the war, Demon Lord was nowhere to be found. Like he had vanished into thin air.

“This madness has to stop! Testaments... it doesn't mean that I have to fight this crowd until it ends!” Chu Mo with his rage-filled eyes and mind driven to the point of insanity; with an aggressive attack, he took out the Murdering Heaven blade.

“Reap the souls out!”

Along the slain, it shone out a bright light under the deepest night.

Everyone who saw that slain were instantly stunned.

Dedition: ?

“Within this realm... such a fearful skill exists?” The young man who came from the Immortal Sky had just ended a life of a Vermillion bird associates with his blade, his pupils suddenly enlarged after he saw the slain performed by Chu Mo. His eyes flashed with a tinge of fear.

He never saw such dynamic skill in the Immortal Sky!

“The heritage from Misty Palace...is it possible that it is mightier than the Immortal Sky? I must possess this skill! Whatever it takes... I can drop the sword and remaster the skill of blade!” The eyes of the young prodigy from the immortal sky, revealing his burning desire.

As he is quite far from the scene, he didn't actually feel the power of the slain presented by Chu Mo. Naturally, he didn't capture the expressions of the men enveloped by Chu Mo's blade.

That expression is called... despair!

The young man from the Immortal Sky soon realized the soul-stirring slain by Chu Mo.

Seven or Eight heads, beheaded by Chu Mo's blade in one slain.

Blood splashes everywhere!

Even the night is pitch dark now, the combatants who were in the Iron Bone realm had good eyesight. Naturally, they all saw Chu Mo beheading seven or eight equal level foes.

The once chaotic situation created by the murderous crowd, could not help but be stilled as they took a moment to be forcibly stunned by the scene.

Everyone's spine instantly felt a cold chill that directly shot up to their brain and uncontrollably shook.

Was he even human?

Seven or eight splashes of evil blood flew out to Chu Mo, at the same time, Chu Mo surprised everyone with his sudden movement.....He fled!

Chapter 167: Escaped

“He ran away?”

“Did he just flee?”

“Why is Chu Mo running away?”

“Quick, catch him!”

“Don’t let him escape!”

“You, stop right there!”

Although the crowd was petrified of Chu Mo’s killer move, their courage was instantly bolstered when they saw Chu Mo running away. They couldn't help, but roar loudly.

If Chu Mo escaped just like this, then all of their lives would not be spared.

Almost a thousand men were sent out to hunt down this one young man. If he still easily escaped and news of this were to spread out; with all the sacrifices and damages created in the war, they’d become the laughing stock of the entire world.

Alas, Chu Mo was not stupid, why would he just stay still? How could he stay and wait for his death?

Thus, not only did he run away from the scene, he even ran faster than he had when he came out from the Yellow Flame City.

Even though every step he took caused his wounded body to contort in extreme pain as if it was going to split in half, Chu Mo clenched his teeth, gathered his focus, and strained every nerve in his body to speed up his Phantom Wind Steps, running as fast as he could under the night sky.

The crowd was not able to chase him before their realms were sealed, much less after their realm became restricted. Plus, many of them were long exhausted. In a blink of an eye, they were soon left far behind by Chu Mo.

Their eyes all became red!

Before the war had began, there were some who had the thought of quitting and staying away. However, up to this moment, no one thought of leaving anymore.

Now, almost everyone held only one thought in their mind: to stay alive and hunt down Chu Mo so they could grab the heritage of the Misty Palace!

This was because they yearned for every martial technique that had been performed by Chu Mo.

This included the associates from the Vermillion Bird continent.

From their perspective, the martial techniques carried out by Chu Mo came from the heritage of the Misty Palace!

In this crowd, not many of them participated in the annihilation of the Misty Palace. Therefore, almost everyone started to question about the real power of the Misty Palace before they were destroyed.

“...Perhaps the martial techniques mastered by him were meant to be concealed by the Misty Palace! Yes, this should be it! It was the forbidden secret!”

“Maybe because of the fact that the previous Misty Palace only had female apprentices who cultivated the martial techniques, that they had been unable to carry out the true power of those techniques!”

“Chu Mo never approached any distinctive sect at all. The techniques which he had mastered must be from the heritage of the Misty Palace!”

Of course, some were more skeptical about the theories.

“The high-power who had sealed our Realm, is it related to the Misty Palace?”

“Right, what Chu Mo has mastered may most likely not be from the heritage of the Misty Palace!”

“I think the martial techniques mastered by Chu Mo should be the world’s most powerful techniques!”

However, another voice abruptly made itself heard and instantly stopped any objections.

“If this turns out to be the fact, then we should capture Chu Mo at once! If we can find out the martial techniques that he mastered with some interrogation, isn’t it worth more than the heritage from the Misty Palace?”

The one who mentioned about their sealed realm by the hidden high-power... what’s the point to worry about it now? If it intended to kill them all, how would they be able to fight it?

As such, after realizing the fact, almost everyone began to insanely chase after Chu Mo without abandon.

Up until now, despite the one hundred sixty or seventy people who had died to Chu Mo, the significant casualties were located in the attack between Azure Dragon Court and Vermillion Bird Association, causing more than three hundred people to die in the war.

Only the five hundred plus people who had stopped attacking each other, were left to chase after Chu Mo.

Chu Mo trained a few of his techniques during the combat, allowing him to use them more efficiently. For example, when he

now performed the Phantom Wind Steps, he ran even faster than the wind because he had reached the next stage in mastery.

Mountains appear over the horizon a hundred miles away.

The mountain ridge was shaped like dragon's back, stretching and undulating, lying still with green forest covering it. Even under the night sky, there was strong and magnanimous energy emanating from the mountains.

In the general communities, a famous saying goes like this: never enter the woods!

This is because the thickest forest contains the biggest possibilities of unknown danger.

However, Chu Mo need places like this now!

So, when he saw the rolling mountains, his face finally began beaming with joy.

He sped up his pace, even at the expense of overly consuming his internal force. In a short while, after he ran about a hundred miles, he managed to reached the edge of the woods. Without any hesitation, he rushed right into the woods.

Again, he ran another hundred miles more in the woods. Finally, he found a suitable place for his escape.

The soaring cliff with peak shrouded in clouds!

Under the night sky, he stood at the bottom of the cliff looking towards the sky. He could only see the clouds and mists. Occasionally, when the wind blew away the clouds and mists, steep cliffs can be seen extending to nowhere!

The bare wall of the cliff had just a few trees with tenacious vitality that grew out from the rocks. However, the distance from each tree made it almost impossible to climb the rocky wall with just these trees.

Furthermore, the steep cliff is too high; even the masters in the Golden Stone Realm would have a hard time reaching the top!

Because once the energy has dried up, one will definitely die by falling from above.

“Well, not too bad.” Chu Mo panted heavily while wiping off the sweat on his forehead. He murmured: “Even if they have restored their strength, I think they can hardly climb up this one steep cliff. By that time, I will be waiting for them at the top!”

Chu Mo then startED to climb the rocky wall. Using the Murdering Heaven Edge to pierce into the hard rocky surface, bit by bit, he climbs incessantly.

Although he has the sharp Murdering Heaven Edge in his hand,

his climbing pace was still considerably slow.

The wounds on his body continuous bled, almost dying his clothes completely red.

Like a carved stone, his expression maintained a dignified determination, showing perseverance and steadiness in his gaze.

Continuously persevering, he slowly headed upward.

In between the layers of clouds, the Demon Lord was staring down towards Chu Mo, feeling touched by his disciple's perseverance.

Actually, before Chu Mo fled from the scene, the Demon Lord almost couldn't hold himself from reminding Chu Mo: Testament does not mean you need to fight until it ends!

Defeating this many enemies was a considerable miracle for a young man like Chu Mo! Even when he was in the Heaven Realm being hunted by the High-power, he could only barely produce better results.

Chu Mo didn't disappoint him. Soon after he realized that his reckless fighting could not kill every enemy, he fled the scene without hesitation.

Demon Lord wanted to know: How will Chu Mo deal in this challenging situation?

In fact, anyone who analyzes the situation will think that without the help from Demon Lord, Chu Mo will definitely die!

This is because this is a hopeless situation!

Even though everyone was in the same realm as Chu Mo, there were still at least five hundred people left in the crowd!

No matter how powerful his martial techniques are, there is still strength in numbers; if there is enough ants, an elephant may be bitten to death. If they work together to attack Chu Mo, Chu Mo will have no chance at survival.

However, this does not mean that running away is a safe route to take either.

This is due to Chu Mo's severely injured body. If he can't find a safe shelter to treat his wounds, he will still have no choice but to face death.

Once the Demon Lord decides to help Chu Mo, then the Testament would be considered to have ended.

However, this would also mean that he had failed...

Chapter 168: The Lone Peak - Part 4

Demon Lord was pleased because Chu Mo had not let him down!

Chu Mo had unexpectedly chosen this escape place, that even Demon Lord was surprised by his choice. Because for Chu Mo, the steep cliff was also a huge challenge for his current situation.

When Chu Mo climbed up to more than three hundred feet, his exacerbated injuries causing him lose his grip and almost fall from the steep wall. Luckily, there was a small tree within his reach. He managed to grasp the small tree and stabilize his balance.

After he overcame the heart-pounding situation, Chu Mo impassively continued his climb.

Until the breakthrough of the first layer of clouds and mists, Chu Mo looked up, through the glimmering light from the twinkling stars, he still saw the extending walls with no ends.

“The higher, the better!” Chu Mo murmured with his clenched teeth.

Eight hundred feet... A thousand feet... Two thousand feet!

When he reached two thousand five hundred feet, the strong wind blew aggressively, and the temperature plummeted around him. Injuries on his body were aggravated by the situation.

Chu Mo realized if he cannot treat his wounds immediately, he would not be able to hold on any further.

Soon after, Chu Mo sat on an old bough and started to use Murdering Heaven Edge to dig a hole on the steep wall.

The Murdering Heaven Edge was undoubtedly sharp, yet even so, Chu Mo was still amazed with its sharpness.

Using Murdering Heaven Edge to chip off the hard-rocky wall was like cutting tofu. Chunks and chunks of rocks fell to the bottom of the cliff.

At this very moment, the chasers had reached the bottom of the cliff!

Many masters exist in this world, especially those who were defined as hidden dragons and crouching tigers from the continent of Azure Dragon and Vermillion Bird.

Exactly like how Demon Lord predicted, running away would not simply allow one to throw off these chasing masters!

This is because some experts among them have the tracking ability, they managed to pick up Chu Mo's trail and followed him to the cliff.

“Damn it, how high is the cliff? I can't see the peak!”

“Check out the other routes, see if we can go around it? How the hell are we supposed to climb this steep cliff?”

“Our realm has been restricted, even if it’s not, with the strength of Golden stone state, it is still difficult to climb up the cliff!”

“If only we had masters from the Understanding Intent state, they can directly ascend to the peak!”

“Quit your thoughts, if I guessed it right, Elder Fu Long of Understanding Intent state may have died in the hand of the high-power who restricted our state.”

“I’m afraid that Granny Qu from the Vermillion Bird Association is also in a negative situation now.”

“The terrifying high-power...”

At the bottom of the cliff, the gathered crowd of masters from Azure Dragon and Vermillion Bird Continent could not help but quiet down momentarily.

“What shall we do now? Watch that little bastard climb up the steep cliff then escape freely?” One of them impatiently questioned.

“Chu Mo is severely injured as well, it is impossible for him to

escape any further!” Someone stated in a cold manner, “And I know this mountain! It is the Lone Peak!”

“Lone Peak?”

“Yes, all I can say is that the kid had found himself a dead end. He thought he could escape when he saw the cliff in the dark, then without much consideration, he climbed up the cliff. Wait until tomorrow. He will realize how foolish his actions were!” The person sneered and spoke further, “If he keeps on running with his technique, we might not be able to catch him. However, since he escaped to the Lone Peak, rest assured, either he will die of starvation, or come down first!”

“The Lone Peak... what is it about this place? How can you be so sure?” Someone from the Vermillion Bird Association asked.

The world works its wonder in mysterious ways.

A moment ago, both parties were at each other’s throat in the life-or-death situation. But now, they seemingly had no memory of the war they were involved in before this moment.

“My sect is less than five hundred miles from here. As such, I am considerably the one who knows best about The Lone Peak!” A middle-aged man who presumably was in his forties emerged from the crowd.

This man is not from the Azure Dragon Court, but he was an

Elder from one of the sects in Azure Dragon Continent. His name was Zhao Chang Hai.

Before Zhao Chang Hai's realm was restricted, he was also an expert within the Golden Stone State. Not many recognized him in the land of Azure Dragon. However, he has a certain amount of popularity at the Da Xia.

“The Lone Peak, three thousand feet above sea level...is an isolated peak!” Zhao Chang Hai grunted, “The reason why it was called the isolated peak was because of its steep wall in all directions, absolutely no slopes can be found! If the weather in the morning is nice and you look at it from afar, it is almost reminiscent of the shaft of a brush that stands in between the sky and the land. It is one of the three remote mountains in the land of Azure Dragon, another two would be the Solitary God Peak of Undying Mountain situated at the Immortal Sky, and Solitary Sword Peak at Heaven Sword Sect.”

“So, this is the Lone Peak of the three remote mountains. Before this, we knew where the Solitary Sword Peak and Solitary God Peak were yet, now it is the first time to have also seen The Lone Peak.” Someone sighed in amazement.

The corner of Zhao Chang Hai's mouth twitched a little. Displeasure arising by what was just said. It may sound harmless, but it also indicated that there was no distinctive sect around the area of the Lone Peak, resulting in it not being as commonly known by others.

“Hey, although The Lone Peak is less famous than the other two

peaks, it has two distinctive peculiarities which even outstand the other two peaks.” He said coldly.

“Which are the two peculiarities?” Someone asked.

“First, the rare medicinal herbs! It is impossible for one to reach the top of the peak by climbing, even if Understanding Intent State experts flew to the top of the peak, they would find hard to stay long. Hence, The Lone Peak has vast lands, the whole mountain has several hundred miles of radius. There are all kinds of fine medicinal herbs that grow wildly across the great land. Most of the herbs are extremely rare and precious!” Zhao Chang Hai proudly said, “This is the first peculiarity!”

“What is the second peculiarity?” Someone in the crowd questioned.

Zhang Chang Hai then stolidly said: “The second peculiarity is actually the Dragonfish of Heavenly Lake!”

“Dragonfish of Heavenly Lake? You’re saying the Dragonfish of Heavenly Lake is actually originated from the Lone Peak?” People present at the scene shockingly looked towards Zhao Chang Hai with eyes filled with doubt.

Most of the people in the crowd showed their shock and disbelief plainly on their face.

Dragonfish of Heavenly Lake, was a very rare species in the land

of four wonders. Not only did it taste delicious, but it was also said to be the world's top-notch food ingredients, and it had a kind of taste which could drive crazy every living being. A Dragonfish a day was also rumoured to extend life expectancy for up to fifty years! It also had a magical efficacy that heals a hundred diseases and cured a thousand poison!

This was not just some legend, this was a solid fact!

It was just that the Dragonfish was a rare and precious delicacy, which only appear once in every decade or even every century!

Furthermore, no one actually knew where the fish originated from.

Today, they heard it from the mouth of Zhao Chang Hai. It was indeed very shocking, but at the same time, it is hard to believe that this was true.

In fact, after Zhao Chang Hai had delivered the shocking fact, he couldn't help but regret this act. As Dragonfish of Heavenly Lake is the biggest secret withheld in his sect.

He didn't understand why he had so easily revealed the secret to everyone.

However, once the secret had been revealed, there was no turning back.

At this moment, someone doubtingly asked, “Dragonfish of Heaven Lake, I heard it originated from the northern part, the Black Tortoise Continent. Since when did it become the peculiarity of Azure Dragon continent?”

“Indeed. I’ve also heard that Dragonfish originated from the coldest place in the farthest north!” Someone added.

While Zhao Chang Hai was wallowing in regret of his unexpected doings, he heard their doubts and stolidly replied, “If all of you don’t believe it, that too, is fine!”

Chapter 169: Imperious Demon Lord - Part 5

At this moment, someone among the crowd said: “Dragonfish of Heavenly Lake... It is not impossible for it to exist here. Legend has it that the Dragonfish are not an earthly being. During primitive times, there was once an open slit that appeared between the sky across the four continents, no one knows why it occurred. Even today, there’s still no way to prove whether the open slit has ever existed.”

The person pauses a little then went on with the speech: “However, I’ve researched on many classics and historical records, and I think the legend could be true! The open slit existed before, and along with it, many kinds of living beings from another realm entered our world. The Dragonfish of Heavenly Lake were one of the many kinds. During that time, when it fell out from the open slit, it might have not only fallen in the farthest north of Black Tortoise Continent. Furthermore, I think its primary efficacy might be more than to simply just extend fifty years of life expectancy.”

“Old man, how did you know?” Someone in the crowd asked: “You are very sure of your words, perhaps you have seen it before?”

Everyone subconsciously turned and looked at the person who spoke.

The person who took the floor was an old man, silver-haired with wrinkles scrawled over his face. He has a slim figure which makes him looks like he is extremely delicate.

After what he had heard, he smiled: “Years ago, an inept old man like myself did indeed see one, and luckily have feasted on one Dragonfish as well!”

Gasp!

Immediately a shocked gasp can be heard from the crowd.

Their eyes were filled with disbelief.

After a while, some of them who recognized the old man approached him and greeted him respectfully.

“Sir Qi, you are here too!”

“Here I am, honored to meet you. Years ago, I was taught by you, Sir Qi.”

“So, it is Sir Qi, I didn’t realize your presence just then, please accept my formal greetings.”

Some of the experts from Azure Dragon continent followed along to greet the old man. Whereas, experts from Vermillion Bird continent stood quite dumbfoundedly.

Someone explained in a low voice: “Sir Qi has gained popularity in the land of the Azure Dragon. Although his state is considerably

high, he only reaches the apex of Golden Stone state. However, he loves to teach younger generations, it's his nature. Many experts from Azure Dragon continent have been taught by him in their early age. Don't be fooled by his looks, although he looks like he is now in his seventies, in fact, he is already more than a hundred years old!"

The silver-haired old man smiled: "I come here because of curiosity. What makes a thirteen or fourteen years old child a formidable opponent? We have a different purpose here, all of you wanted to seize his heritage, but I wanted to make him my disciple. I wanted to appeal all of you to spare his life. However, I don't think that's necessary now, as the mysterious high-power hidden under the shadow will not permit all of you to kill that young kid."

If Sir Qi's words came out from any other person's mouth at the scene, perhaps one will surely be ridiculed by everyone.

Protecting Chu Mo? What a joke! Who in the crowd doesn't want the heritage of Misty Palace from Chu Mo? And those martial techniques that cultivated by Chu Mo?

Whoever dares to say they don't want it, he might be drowned in everyone's saliva.

And Sir Qi just said it out loud, everyone who knows him has a hard time to refute his words.

Because judging from every aspect, Sir Qi is hardly the evildoer.

Especially when some of them recall, Sir Qi just followed the crowd to track Chu Mo from the beginning.

He never fights anyone nor did he Chu Mo!

Someone helplessly smiled and said: “Sir Qi, is it worth the trouble? We have no grudge upon Chu Mo either, but the heritage he holds doesn’t belong to him, and it is not for someone at his age to bear as well. We require only the heritage, not his life.”

At this moment, another man in the crowd sneered: “All right, I believe in Sir Qi’s words. If the words came out from other person’s mouth, I would think that is a bunch of bullshits! Not wanting his life? What a joke! Not wanting his life means giving out your own life! Once such monstrous youngster grows into a man, will he spare all of your lives?”

The crowd is instantly silent. Because everyone knows that it is a fact, they just don’t want to make it clear.

Suddenly at that moment, someone broke the silence by yelling into the air: “Great elder who hides in the shadow, who are you? What’s your purpose in sealing our Dan Tian and restricting our state? If you plan to kill us, at least make us understand how we die?”

Practically everyone kept their silence after that, they can sense the high-power who sealed their Dan Tian and restricted their state was watching them in the dark.

As expected, a faint voice came through within the oblivion: “Each of you makes killings and robbing sound so rightful. Think of greed as the power of justice, think of yourself as the embodiment of truth. In fact, all of you deserve to die.”

The crowd remained in dead silence.

Even Sir Qi who has lived for more than a hundred years and once feasted on Dragonfish, can't help but slightly narrowed his eyes, trying to use the secret technique which he learned by himself to sense the location of the high-power. However, he realized he can get nothing. Sigh, in disappointment, he understands the gap between them is too great!

“However, to kill all of you means to dirty my hands! A bunch of ants. I have utterly no interest in killing all of you.” The voice within the oblivion is faint and cold.

Yet for people at the scene, those words are equal to a merciful sound from heaven.

The one who yelled was a little excited when his questions were being answered. Therefore, he went on and asked again: “Great elder, what exactly you want us to do?”

“Be a training dummy for my disciple!”

Such domineering answer caused a stir in the crowd.

Many of their faces showed anger.

This is just too much!

They are people who carry high status, at any rate, never ever have they been looked down upon by anyone before. But when they recall that the higher power has unfathomable depths of strength, they became quiet momentarily.

“I restricted all of your states is considerably an act of a bully, I have no interest to kill all of you... If anyone of you has true capabilities to grab the heritage from my disciple, even to kill him before I am able to save him, I will not blame any of you! Nor I will look for any vengeance after that!” Demon Lord said apathetically within the oblivion.

If anyone in the crowd does have true capabilities, which they are able to kill Chu Mo before he saves Chu Mo, then he can only blame himself and his disciple of being too weak.

In this case, if both Demon Lord and Chu Mo were killed then they have to accept their fate!

An average man may have a hard time to understand the Demon Lord's mind. As a matter of fact, if one have experienced what Demon Lord had gone through with his ordeal, one would understand Demon Lord's painstaking efforts.

If one cannot endure these tribulations, what more can one take

to face trials that are harder than this?

“Great elder, do you meant what you’ve said?” someone asked excitingly.

Chapter 170: Sir Qi - Part 6

The Demon Lord gave a cold snort without any further response.

However, his words are enough to make every one of them delighted!

As none of them have dreamed of this ideal outcome.

The Demon Lord is clearly a man of his words, given that he possessed such a high state. Thus, for these people, his words meant: If you can grab the heritage from my disciple, by all means, do it! Even it means to kill him, I will not put blame upon all of you!

There is such a special master existing in this world?

Although they find it hard to believe, when they recall the monstrous act of Chu Mo and how he made them developed the teeth-itching hatred, they managed to comprehend a little about the words from the mysterious high-power.

An evildoer young man like Chu Mo is indeed hard to kill!

For instance, to one's surprise, he climbs up the Lone Peak with methods that none of them has any idea of.

Therefore, besides besieging the area at the bottom of the cliff,

they have no other better idea!

Follow Chu Mo to climb up the cliff? No one would do so, as anyone would know, the strength and the Murdering Heaven Edge which the young man carries... neither was herbivorous.

Before Chu Mo fled the scene, the image of him beheading seven or eight people at once are still imprinted deeply within most of them. Even to think of it now, the terrifying feeling is still there.

But anyway, now that they know the high-power who was hidden in the shadow only wants his disciple to gain combat experience rather than to kill them, they can now stuff their heart back to their stomach.

The night soon passed. What comes next morning is a bright sunny day. The Lone Peak which shrouded in mystery had finally been unveiled by the winds and make itself presentable to everyone.

People who lay first, clear sight of the peak can't help but exclaim in astonishment: "What a magnificent mountain!"

Everyone was swooned over by the three thousand feet high cliff.

"Too high!"

"Extremely steep!"

“That young man did climb up the steep cliff, didn’t he?”

Many of them dare not to believe the fact that Chu Mo had climb up the mountain.

However, when they approached closer, they find out some neat stones on the floor like they were cut by blades.

Someone went on to test the hardness of the rocks, and there are amazement twitching at the corners of their mouth: “The stones were incredibly hard, even with my unrestricted Golden Stone State, and precious sword, may not be able to cut the stone neatly in shape!”

Some who are hesitant to believe also went on to test the rocks. Eventually, all of them cry out in surprise.

“These stones are incredibly stiff!”

“The Murdering Heaven Edge that he possessed must be the world’s sharpest weapon!”

“It must be a real difference to have a good master!”

“I am already starting to run out of confidence...” Someone said it dispiritedly: “Though with the promises of the high-power, which he will not avenge us by killing Chu Mo, the problem is... I

don't feel safe about it!"

"Indeed, those Golden State elders and two elders of Understanding Intent State from Azure Dragon Court and Vermillion Bird Associations... perhaps have died in the hand of Chu Mo." Some have whispered.

Silence falls momentarily in the crowd. A man who is unwilling to accept the fact said: "We couldn't retreat now, could we?"

Sir Qi stepped out and said: "Sometimes take a step back doesn't necessarily mean you'll lose your courage. Moreover, your violent act is basically not something to be proud of."

Another man mockingly responded: "Sir Qi, you shouldn't have spoken more of your sarcastic remarks, if you have no purpose in here, why bother to stay? When Chu Mo appears here, he may not believe that you are a good man either."

"Indeed, you can't stop us, neither you can to stop Chu Mo, why stay here? Why not just leave?"

Sir Qi faintly smiled, he speaks without anger and unhurriedly: "During those ancient times, heavenly beings that fall from the huge rip across the sky of the four continents, might not necessarily be only the ordinary beings, high-power from the other side might as well entered into our world. I constantly have this feeling that the martial techniques carried out by Chu Mo, are not something that supposed to exist in our world! Though my state isn't high enough, I still reached the apex level of Golden Stone

State. Therefore I can still know some things about the world.”

The crowd quietly look at Sir Qi.

Sir Qi gave a smile to them: “At least, according to what I understand, not to mention the top sect like the Immortal Sky, even Heavenly Sword Sect, Deities from other realms, and the strongest from four secluded supreme sects... may not able to sealed all of our dantian in one shot, nor possessed a power that can accurately restrict our state. The young man from the Immortal Sky, have I say it right?”

Sir Qi throw his question to the young prodigy whose surname is Meng from the Immortal Sky.

Meng Li look at Sir Qi with a bitter smile: “I have not heard much about these anecdotes. But I have never encountered such a powerful master in this world.”

An elder from Vermillion Bird Continent agreed in a low voice: “Yes, I’ve once met a great hermit, he might have reached the Intent of Heaven State as he has the unfathomable depth of strength. But I have never heard of him having these kind of capabilities, too. According to legend, above the four continents, there is the heavenly realm, I’m afraid these sorts of techniques must be from the heavenly realm.”

An indrawn gasp arose from the crowd after what they’ve heard.

The existence of another great world is too far out of reach for them.

Those who achieved the Dao and transcended from the four continents must have transcended to the heavenly realm!

Sir Qi nodded: “That’s why I need to see exactly how strong Chu Mo is! I have no more strength to enhance my level, nor will I have the chance to enter the heavenly realm, but if I can witness the transcendence from a younger generation, I believe that is the greatest thing in my life, and there’d be no more regrets in my life!”

“What do you have in mind, Sir Qi?” asked the people who knew him, they gazed in awe at the elder who has aged more than hundred years.

Sir Qi calmly stated: “Although I might not be qualified, I want to be one of the guardians for that young man.”

“What...” each of their faces showed weird expressions.

All of them rack their brains to grab the heritage of Misty Palace from Chu Mo, trying hard to kill Chu Mo, but Sir Qi has to be the black sheep among them.

Hence, they have no standings to blame Sir Qi either.

You can’t force others to become a robber like you, can you?

“In other words, Sir Qi is now our enemy?” someone said teasingly.

Actually, it is what everyone thought.

Even though everyone has the same state, but if one suddenly ambush the other, it's still hard to defend against a sudden attack!

Sir Qi calmly shook his head: “I will not attack any of you, plus, I don't know whether Chu Mo will agree or not. Moreover, I would like to see what he will do to escape these challenging situations.”

Chapter 171: Rushing To Die

Meng Li, the young prodigy from the Immortal Sky suddenly stood up and paid his respect to Sir Qi. He said faintly: “Although I am not as bright, but I understand your intentions and your efforts after everything you’ve said. As such, I, Meng Li, shall leave!”

“Brother Meng... you?”

“Brother Meng, you really think of quitting?”

“How can we explain this to the court ruler?”

Silver deacons and bronze stewards of Azure Dragon Court looked anxiously at Meng Li. Who could have thought that the backbone of their troop wanted to quit after all they have been through.

Meng Li let out a smile after he took a look at them, “What explanations? All of you may continue, but I quit!”

“What use is it of us to continue this quest after brother Meng leaves? We know our own capabilities. It's just that... how do we face the court ruler in this way?” one of the silver deacon of Azure Dragon Court said bitterly, “How do we possibly provide the justification for so many of us who have died in this war?”

Meng Li took a look at them and said calmly: “What’s there to say? Even the Golden Stone state elders can barely hold on to this

war. What alone us?” He didn’t mention a matter that buried deep inside his mind

After this event, whether Azure Dragon Court can remain existing in this world... that’s the question which should be worried about!

Currently, Meng Li only had one thought in mind. He just wanted to leave and go back to the Immortal Sky. So then he would be able to provide the firsthand report of the incident to the ruler of the Immortal Sky.

After all, both Chu Mo and Immortal Sky have created much rancor between each other.

Last year, when Chu Mo sought to become a disciple of the Immortal Sky, he was harshly rejected by seven elders and was humiliated by them as well.

If Meng Li was the one who had encountered such humiliations, he would make sure that he remembered it.

Now that Chu Mo became the disciple of a fearful master, when he grew older and stronger, who knows whether he will avenge the humiliation he suffered from the Immortal Sky?

Therefore, without much hesitation, Meng Li expressed his intention to leave the scene.

Tens of the silver deacons and bronze stewards were considerably the core elites from Azure Dragon Court, so when they saw Meng Li left and heard what he has said, all of them wanted to leave as well. Without further thought, they head towards the direction where Meng Li was heading.

“Brother Meng Li, wait for us! We are coming with you!”

Already having low morale, the crowd became quieter after Meng Li and his troop left.

Many of them rethought the situation. Whether they should stay or leave, and whether it was worthwhile.

At this moment, a martial artist from Vermillion Bird continent stood up and calmly declared his intentions, “All of you may leave, but I will stay. That little bastard....I will tear him to pieces!”

Everyone was instantly stunned by his words.

Since everyone knew that Chu Mo was the disciple of a terrifying high-power, no matter how they wanted to kill Chu Mo to end all their misery, they only dared to kill him in their mind. No one would ever say it out loud like him.

Someone in the crowd recognized the courageous man. The person explained in a low voice to the person beside him, “He is Hua Quan Niu... a capable man who has made his name for himself in the land of Vermillion Bird. He seems to have reached the state

of Understanding Intent! Didn't expect him to have gone unnoticed in the crowd."

"Hua Quan Niu? What a strange name."

"Hua Quan Niu allegedly grew up on a farm. His name was given by his illiterate parents. However, he later became a disciple of a prestigious house through an unusual encounter, and revealed his outstanding talent of cultivation."

"Why would a man like him hate Chu Mo? He doesn't seem like he even needs the heritage from Chu Mo?"

"Because his son was killed by Chu Mo!"

"Is that so?"

A person who knew the story whispered what he knew to the other person, "Hua Quan Niu's son, Hua Nan was from the Vermillion Bird Association. Years ago, his son fell in love with a disciple from the Misty Palace, and she was one from twelve disciples who inherited the heritage of Misty Palace! It caused an uproar in the land of Vermillion Bird, almost every martial artist heard of this scandal. The scandal ended soon after Hua Nan, and the disciple from Misty Palace joined the Vermillion Bird Associations with the help of Hua Quan Niu. The heritage was also taken by the association."

"I see, but how did Hua Nan end up got killed by Chu Mo?"

Someone asked.

“I’m not sure about the details, but it seems like the leading cause of this incident related to Miao Yi Niang, the other disciple from Vermillion Bird Association. Hua Quan Niu was doted on his son, now that the son had been killed by Chu Mo, how could he possibly let it go?”

“I have no interest in the heritage that he is carrying. I only hold one purpose, that is to kill him!” Hua Quan Niu said coldly. Coldness flickered within Hua Quan Niu’s eyes as he stood there gazing at the crowd then he continued, “As such, if any of you want to leave, just leave, but not me, and I won’t wait here either!”

Then he shouted loudly at the sky: “Great elder, would you dare to give me a chance to avenge my son? Free me! Great elder, would you dare?!”

His voice was filled with endless grief and indignation reverberated across the sky and earth.

“Your son deserved his death!” An indifferent voice came through the air, “If he hadn’t planned to kill another person in the first place, how could he possibly get murdered by another? His death was mostly because of you! And here you are, shamelessly raising such a request... how pathetic.”

“Great elder, would you dare?” Hua Quan Niu had gone a little insane, even a little disappointed at this stage.

Earlier, he thought that no matter how capable a secular young man like Chu Mo, he could have torn him to pieces easily and avenge his son with his own hands.

However, little did he know that the secular young man had such a broad and powerful background.

Perhaps, even the disciples who were taught personally by the grandmasters from four secluded sects, may not be able to compare with Chu Mo's status.

Under desperation stakes, Hua Quan Niu had no choice but to stake all on one throw. He realized that the high-power who was hidden under the shadows was a proud man. Therefore he wishes to apply this kind of method to provoke him.

As long as he managed to regain his state, he was confident that he could kill Chu Mo in one shot!

“Great elder, would you dare?” Once again he yelled with indignation.

“Since you eagerly seek death for yourself, you can't blame me for your choice. What's there to lose if I fulfill your desire?” When the cold voice sounded from the sky, Hua Quan Niu felt his body lighten simultaneously.

Enormous and boundless power instantly restored on his body.

A madness flashes in the eyes of Hua Quan Niu, gnashing his teeth saying: “Great elder, would you dare to assure that you will not intervene in this war?”

“I will kill you if another crap comes out from your mouth.” The voice of Demon Lord sounded scary from afar, “Do not think that I am moved by your words, I wish to see how my disciple end your life!”

“As long as you won’t interfere, it is hard to say who will die first!” Hua Qian Niu gnashed his teeth.

As he spoke, he who was in the Understanding Intent State abruptly ascended from the ground and made his way up to the top of the steep cliff!

Everyone held their breath when they saw this scene.

They were amazed at the significant difference created by the master of Understanding Intent State.

Although the height of the cliff was more than three thousand feet, it was not difficult for a master of Understanding Intent State to fly over!

Despite the fact of their adversarial relations with the high-power in the shadow, many of them couldn’t understand his act. Is this not equally allowing someone to kill his own disciple? Or, perhaps he was preparing to intervene at the critical moment?

Just then, the crowd below the cliff cried out in alarm.

A giant boulder was thrown ferociously from the sky towards Hua Quan Niu, who is flying closely along the rocky wall.

A young man's voice as cold as ice simultaneously sounded from above: "I will send you to meet your son!"

Chapter 172: Smash It!

BANG!

That thirty feet wide giant boulder was thrown ferociously towards Hua Quan Niu.

“Scram!” Hua Quan Niu roared thunderously.

Along with his roar, a powerful force directly stroked against the giant boulder.

POW!

The giant boulder instantly busted into pieces!

Cobbles and pebbles began falling to the ground like raindrops.

The panicked crowd at the bottom of the cliff ran as far as they could to avoid the raining rocks.

As they were still restricted in Iron Bone State, if they were hit by the rocks, it would be too much for them to bear.

On the other hand, although Hua Quan Niu smashed the giant boulder in one strike, the situation curbed his ascending momentum.

He thrust his sword into the rocky wall of the cliff, causing an ear-piercing sound and lit a spark from the sharp edges of his precious blade. Nevertheless, he consumed almost every of his strength to penetrate the wall, just so that he may stick his body closer to it.

“Little bastard, even if it’ll bring death to me... my will is to have you die in pieces!” Hua Quan Niu roared in rage.

Rumble of voice shook the sky.

Yet not a single sound could be heard from the young man from above.

Instead, what responded him was huge boulders that were thrown one after another!

Each boulder had a radius of thirty to forty feet and were continuously thrown down at him from above.

Hua Quan Niu dodged between falling stones to avoid getting hit. However, he was hemmed in on all sides.

The crowd was overwhelmed on what they were witnessing.

It was common knowledge that a martial artist who was in Iron Bone State could lift, and throw a boulder that was more than ten

feet wide and hundred tons in weight from above without it being a difficult task at all.

They had discovered one thing on some boulders which had not fell on Hua Quan Niu...these boulder were perfectly shaped in cubes, just like a block of tofu!

This was just too shocking!

All of them knew Chu Mo possessed the finest blade, Murdering Heaven Edge. However, no matter how precious and finest an edge is, would it be possible that a blade possesses such sharpness to this extent?

Hence, isn't he suffering from severe injuries as well?

It is indeed hard to imagine that the raining boulders were the act from a wounded young man.

“Even if I possess such similar God's crafted blade, will I still be able to accomplish such insane action within Iron Bone state?” Someone couldn't help but ask himself.

The stupefied crowd below the cliff sensed the powerful strength of the young man who made them feel chills directly down their spine.

Except for Hua Quan Niu, who was now situated in mid-air. He was so close to losing his temper!

He had thought that Chu Mo was really something when he threw down one boulder. Who could have known that it was just the beginning...?

And he had no idea how Chu Mo obtained these boulders that were thrown continuously at him.

Which had also resulted in him dealing with some cold sweat situations where he almost would be hit by the boulders. Even though it could hardly hurt Hua Quan Niu, it managed to slow down his ascent speed.

An Understanding Intent State martial artist was finding it hard to break through the difficult situation caused by a young man who was using mere boulders to block his way. Speak about the frustrations and anger that Hua Quan Niu withheld.

“HAK!” Hua Quan Niu pulled out a sheet of paper talisman and activated it with mystic incantations, his figure instantly vanished into thin air. In the next moment, he reappeared and levitated several thousand feet away from his original spot!

Hua Quan Niu finally broke through Chu Mo’s raining boulders.

However, Hua Quan Niu suddenly realized Chu Mo had stopped throwing boulders at him.

A large hole could be seen in the middle of the rocky wall located

two thousand five hundred feet above sea level. Apparently, it was the hole which dug out by Chu Mo earlier.

“Little bastard, let’s see where else you can escape to!” An evil, sinister expression showed plainly on Hua Quan Niu’s face after he activated the one and only evasion talisman which was originally for the use of survival.

This time he learned his lesson. He distances himself from the Lone Peak as he feared that Chu Mo will again throw boulders at him. From afar, Hua Quan Niu appeared like a deity when he hovered in mid-air. The only significant difference was the hostility that covered him.

Although Hua Quan Niu was considerably a master in Understanding Intent state, he still found it a little difficult to fly in mid-air. Generally, within Understanding Intent state, one can expect to ascent to a few hundred feet altitude. At the very least, not even more than three hundred feet.

This was due to the wind shearing in the atmosphere which will cause severe damage to one’s body.

Thus, not many martial artists in Understanding Intent state would fly over thermosphere.

At this moment, Hua Quan Niu had reached more than a thousand three hundred feet. Which had exceeded far beyond his bearable level!

As such, he had to burn the extensive amount of internal force to support himself.

Actually, he could rest a while at the wall of the cliff then pick up his pace again, this would've been the best way to minimize consumption of his inner force.

Unfortunately, this method cannot be applied due to Chu Mo raining stones down upon him.

Thus, another reason to kill Chu Mo was added in Hua Quan Niu's mind. The hatred already imbued into his bones.

When Hua Quan Niu reached a thousand five hundred feet, he couldn't hold on further. That was when he realized how awesome is the damn little bastard he loathed. Hua Quan Niu was amazed that Chu Mo could climb up further than him.

Regardless how he loathed Chu Mo, he did secretly grow some respect for him.

Because if Chu Mo were an average Iron Bone State martial artist, perhaps the crowd would have torn him to pieces under this circumstance. Yet, he could still hold on to this point by relying on his perseverance and capabilities.

When Hua Quan Niu's mind was boggling about this, he couldn't help but sigh: If only my son had half of Chu Mo's capabilities, perhaps he would not have died in foreign lands.

While that thought lingered in his mind, Hua Quan Niu carefully approached the rocky wall. He wanted to rest a while as he could no longer hold on further. Coincidentally, an old tree was within his reach. Its trunk was like the curved and elongated body of a horned dragon, rooted firmly in the crack of the rocky wall. The width of the trunk was equivalent to the mouth of a soup bowl; therefore, it had no problem bearing his weight.

Just when Hua Quan Niu made his way to that old tree, suddenly ... a fifty to sixty feet boulder once again was thrown from above.

“I’ll stone you to death, wretched old man!”

WHOOSH!

The whistling sounds from the falling boulder pierced the thick air.

As if it’s the heavy sound of a mountain which was thrown from above.

“Little bastard!” Once again, the rage in Hua Quan Niu’s heart was further inflamed by Chu Mo. However, he had no choice but to stay aside to avoid the falling boulder.

KACHAK!

The boulder fell and trampled on the old trees trunk, then it snapped and fell downwards with the boulder.

The falling boulder hit the wall of the cliff and shredded some rocks off the rocky wall.

In the next moment, the sky was once again raining rocks.

CHIANG!

Hua Quan Niu was trying hard to hold back the urge to vomit blood. He had to consume almost all of his inner force to thrust his sword into the rocky wall and cling his body on the wall.

Before he managed to gather his breath.

WHOOSH!

WHOOSH!

WHOOSH!

Another three giant boulders which had a formation of 品 fell from the sky!

Apparently, it was aiming accurately at Hua Quan Niu.

Which means Chu Mo didn't just blindly throw those boulders at him, he deliberately targeted Hua Quan Niu!

“This is too much!” Hua Quan Niu roared in indignation following a mouthful of fresh blood spout out from his mouth.

Hua Quan Niu withdrew his already gouged and nicked sword from the rocky wall, then flew further away from the cliff and descend on the ground.

An Understanding Intent State martial artist was forced to fall back, all because of a young Iron Bone state martial artist who defeated him with boulders!

The crowd of people who hid from afar witnessed the war between Chu Mo and Hua Quan Niu were all dumbfounded at the scene.

Chapter 173: Who Else?

The crowd had thought of all possible outcomes of the battle, all except one.

Although throwing the boulder from the highest point may seem to be of the simplest solution, it is dependent on the person you're aiming at.

And that person is a master of Understanding Intent State!

Under normal circumstances, even if one continuously threw a stone the size of a millstone to Hua Quan Niu, it would be impossible to cause any damage to him.

Just a random strike would smash the stone into pieces.

However, who could have thought that each boulder thrown by Chu Mo had the equal length of thirty feet, which was enough to make tens or hundreds of millstones from it.

Anyone, even masters of Comprehending Intent State, would find the situation challenging, let alone the masters of Understanding Intent State.

Perhaps that was why the light in Hua Quan Niu's face turned ashen after he landed on the ground.

Shame, anger, hate... all kinds of emotion intertwined and stirred within him until a mouthful of blood spilled out from his mouth.

The spectating crowd felt deeply sorry for him as they look on sympathetically.

All they wanted was the heritage carried by Chu Mo and to kill him for good.

And they were assured that they could attack Chu Mo without fear of any retribution ever since the mysterious high-power, Chu Mo's master revealed his intention to put Chu Mo's nose on the grindstone. Anyhow, when things don't turn out how they'd hoped, they would retreat, was the mentality they held.

Like Meng Li, the young man from the Immortal Sky who had left the war peacefully. It is said that there was some rancor that existed between Chu Mo and the Immortal Sky, but look at Meng Li, HE HAD LEFT THE WAR PEACEFULLY.

In turn, this proved that the mysterious high-power was a man of his words.

In other words, all of them were given a leeway throughout this war.

Except for Hua Quan Niu!

He was once given a choice like everyone else, but he gave it up!

When he joined the war, he took an oath of vengeance. That he would not rest until Chu Mo was killed!

Hua Quan Niu's intention did not evoke any reaction from the mysterious high-power. Instead, he was freed from the seal of his state. This was one dramatic turn of event which was beyond their imaginations.

However, the outcome of the battle was the one that made them speechless.

They were so thunderstruck that they wouldn't even have the slightest notion to deride him.

If they were in Hua Quan Niu's situation, perhaps they would have died in the most gruesome manner!

As any thirty feet wide boulder may have crushed them to bits.

"Ruthless young man...!" Someone weakly heaved a sigh.

Sir Qi sat on a giant boulder beside the crowd, the giant boulder was cut in a perfect cube shape. Apparently, it was one of the boulders thrown from above by Chu Mo.

The cut marks on the surface of the boulder indicated that it was

cleanly cut. Anyone who saw those cut marks felt amazed.

Sir Qi let out a full-fledged grin as he spoke: “You call this ruthless? He holds no grudge upon all of you, but because of the lucrative heritage which he might carry, he was hunt down by all of you.”

“More than a thousand people have joined the hunt, the sum of everyone’s ages is more than enough to be his ancestor, and not to forget that any of you have a higher state compared to Chu Mo, yet, you don’t call yourself ruthless when you determine to hunt him down?”

Another voice came through from the crowd as soon as Sir Qi stops.

“Old man, would you just shut up? Speak another word, and I will kill you!” A choleric martial artist from the land of vermillion bird bellowed and gazed at him furiously.

KA-CHAK!

The choleric martial artist was beheaded by the person beside him.

Coming next is a voice as cold as ice: “Even though Sir Qi is not my teacher, he is better than one! If he hadn’t pointed out the right way, I wouldn’t have breakthrough those energy barriers, and my sect would have abandoned me! If any of you dare to speak to Sir

Qi in a lowly manner, I will kill you!”

SHIIIIING!

CLINK!

CLANK!

Tens of people simultaneously draw their weapon.

The atmosphere instantly dropped to a freezing point.

Their faces were solemn.

Accumulated resentment between the land of Azure Dragon and Vermillion Bird intensified the situation; one could cut the atmosphere between them with a knife.

But Hua Quan Niu couldn't care less, the situation between them didn't have a tinge of influence to him. Ever since the exasperated master of Comprehending Intent state landed to the ground, he sat in a lotus position and took his time to rest a bit after he took a healing pill. After enough rest, he stood and threw a glare towards Sir Qi and said, “You wish to become the guardian of that little bastard? He is destined to be a disappointment!”

As he spoke, he turned his way and head to the other direction.

“Sir Hua, where are you heading?” asked by a martial artist from Vermillion Bird continent who happened to know Hua Quan Niu. He looked disappointed, because he was expecting Hua Quan Niu to exterminate the people from Azure Dragon continent.

Hua Quan Niu was, after all, the most powerful martial artist among them.

Who would have known that Hua Quan Niu would leave behind only a bland and unprovoking line of words?

“I am going to the other side of the peak. I will not rest until Chu Mo is killed!” Then he left as he spoke. Hua Quan Niu’s figure soon vanished before their eyes.

“Alas, let it be. Let it be! Chu Mo has such a terrifying master, we are just a bunch of idiots relying on our wishful thinking to kill him!” Sigh a martial artist from one of the sects in Azure Dragon land. He then continued with his voice raised: “I’ve come to know that there’s a vast plain of precious medicinal herbs on top of the Lone Peak. I will take my chance there. In either way, our efforts to grab the heritage of Misty Palace will be in vain. As such, I shall give up this quest!”

Another man emerged from the crowd, he said, “What’s there to hold on to? The high-power who sealed our state is not an idiot, how could he possibly let his disciple die in vain? Particularly a wicked young man like him. We are so blinded by our obsessions, keep building castles in the air. That’s it! I won’t bother with anything anymore, even those precious medicinal herbs on the Lone Peak.” The man continued by shouting his words to the sky:

“Great one, would you unseal my dantian? I no longer want to participate in any of this...”

The man’s words were exactly what they thought of. They were concerned about their sealed dantian as well, they were constantly wondering when it would be unsealed.

“You come and go as you wish? I don’t think such convenient circumstances apply to all of you!” The cold voice from the sky answered.

The crowd was startled from what they heard. Someone couldn’t help but ask: “There are others who have already gone! How come you didn’t stop them like you do to us?”

“Are you sure that I let them go freely?” A cold snort resounded from the sky, “Each of them had broken an arm. The seal of their dantian will forever remain sealed! You are eager to hunt down my disciple but when you found out that you can’t kill him, you wish to go? I may not kill any of you, but this does not mean that all of you will not be punished! You are mature enough to know that not anyone in this world will pamper you like your parents do!”

Hiss!

The crowd cried out over the statements; every one of them stood aghast. They were freaked out.

Up till this moment, they finally understood that there’s no

turning back from the time they made a choice to hunt for Chu Mo. It was destined.

“Great one, you’ve assured us that no harm shall be done to us...” With indignation and despair, a man tried to reason with the high-power.

“I promised not to kill all of you, never have I promise to let all of you go without punishment.” Demon Lord’s indifferent voice sounded even colder in the sky.

“Great one... I, I was wrong, I beg for your forgiveness!” One of the man’s legs turned to jelly, he went down on his knees and kowtowed.

“So, you are willing to break your arm voluntarily and forever remain sealed?” Demon Lord’s cold voice followed with a hint of mockery resounded from the sky, “If you wish to continue your unfinished business here, I won’t stop you. If anyone who manages to grab the heritage from Chu Mo, or even murder him, I will consider you a man with true capabilities!”

“Great One... I, I would rather break my arm and forever remain sealed...” Said a man who could no longer bear the pressure. He was falling apart.

“Then I shall grant you your wish!” Again, the indifferent voice resounded from the sky.

BANG!

The man's arm exploded in pieces, blood mist splatter everywhere from his body. The man fainted after his shrill and dreadful scream.

Next, a cold voice resounded from the sky: "Who else?"

A dead silence fell over the crowd. (To be continued...)

Chapter 174: Accepting The Punishment

They might die if they pursue further.

With Chu Mo's monstrous-like talent and his emerging techniques, these people have little hope for victory.

The image of every random cleave which he has stunningly carried out at every crucial moment still lingers in their heart like a nightmare.

But if they halt their plan, they would have to suffer unbearable sufferings.

Which they might lose an arm, and strength forever sealed in Iron Bone State. This consequence, however, is slightly better than death.

But it is especially hard to accept by the masters of Golden Stone State.

Because they were afraid to have their states sealed forever in Iron Bone State along with their soon dismembered arm, and what's left of them may be slightly more than a practitioner who hasn't overcome any energy barrier yet. It is even pathetic if such strength was placed in their long disdained mortal world... because they wouldn't even be considered as martial art master!

The crowd soon realized that the almighty high-power who stay

hidden in the shadow is no samaritan either. The only reason that their actual strength was restricted was to become a part of his training module for his disciple.

This discovery has everyone's heart sank to the pit of their stomach.

At this moment, someone asked bravely: "Great ones, what will happen with our sealed dantian and restricted state, if once we are able to grab the heritage from Chu Mo and kill him on the spot?"

Everyone stared at the brave man and couldn't help cheering silently in their mind.

Because judging from the experience dealing with the mysterious high-power, they've discovered only obvious questions will bring straight answers.

Otherwise, they would still believe that Meng Li and his troop has left peacefully; They didn't expect that the troop has had encountered attacks and suffered from unimaginable damage.

"You wish to have your strength reinstate after you robbed and murdered my disciple? Are you idiots?" the voice within the sky remain its coldness, but this time with a tinge of anger and a little amused by their silly question.

The answer, however, like pouring cold water on them; the fire of hope was instantly extinguished.

Somebody laughed tragically: “I finally realized that this is simply a road with no return. Yes, if someone did the same to my disciple, I wouldn’t let him run away too. It is merciful enough to spare his life. What more could possibly ask for?”

“Didn’t expect that taking this step will lead us to a dead end.” Someone’s knees got weak and fell onto the floor.

They finally realized that they had held onto overly-optimistic illusions in this war, and their eyes were clouded with greediness.

It is said that an eye for an eye, a life for a life; you kill people, people will kill you, that’s the fact.

As this is the world where evil and benevolence were immeasurable!

Then somebody said sorrowfully: “Great one, I am willing to take the punishment. I will cut off my own arm and my state will forever remain sealed.”

“No! Don’t do it!” Another man abruptly stood up and shouted angrily: “Why are you all such a fool? As long as we have the heritage of Misty Palace with us, we could seek help from the elders of the four secluded sects. I don’t believe that besides him, there’s no one else in this world can’t unseal us...”

Indeed!

Most of their faces lit up with hope when realization dawned on them.

They felt like they had reached an impasse before the realization came to them. If their actual strength was able to be sealed, then there must be someone who could undo it.

It is said that the four secluded sects were connected with the Spiritual Realm. Thus, the abundant power contained in those sects were entirely inconceivable!

While Demon Lord is levitating up above the sky observing the crowds, a disdainful sneer on his handsome face slightly revealed his thought.

Remove the seal? Such skill of mine may not be unparalleled within the Immortal Realm, but if a mortal from the mortal world can break the seal, I am better off dead!

Even the paragon of the Spiritual Realm may not break the seal, much less the mortal world!

Although Demon Lord only had his state reinstated to rank nine, zenith of the Intent of Heaven state, still, no mortal will comprehend his mystical skills.

As the four continents in the mortal world only practices martial arts!

Only after the martial prowess broken through the innate could infuse their cultivated force into every motion and maneuvers, only by then, a faint yellow ray could be seen along with every strike.

Furthermore, when the martial prowess entered the Spiritual Realm, martial arts will evolve into mystical arts, and they will possess inconceivable forces.

As for the Demon Lord, even if he was severely poisoned, and reached the nadir of his state, he can still manipulate the mystic arts!

This is his remarkable ability!

As such, Demon Lord acted nonchalantly towards the crowd's hysterical instigation.

“No, Great one, I admit that I am wrong, therefore I accept the punishment.” Someone shouted loudly.

Finally, someone has come to their senses!

Even if the four secluded sects were related to the Spiritual Realm, and they happen to have someone powerful enough to break the seal, yet, in what terms should they offer their help? In exchange of the heritage of Misty Palace? Don't be ridiculous!

The heritage may not incite any interest from them!

Not to mention many of them were merely qualified to know the existence of the four secluded sects. In fact, has anyone ever encounter any of them from the secluded sects?

And yet, does anyone know where to find them?

“Great one, I am willing to accept the punishment!”

“Me too!”

“I have sinned; thus, I am prepared to be punished!”

For a moment, twenty to thirty people kneeling in contrition and weeping in bitter tears.

They figure their own lives were much more important than to pursue the heritage of Misty Palace carried by Chu Mo.

“You bunch of cowards!” Those who has different standings protested with rage.

BOOM! BOOM! BOOM! BOOM!

A string of explosions came from those repented men while they are still kneeling in contrition, all of their right arms exploded

with blood sprayed like mist in the air.

There was no fluke!

One who made mistakes, must bear full responsibility.

No one shall evade responsibility.

Some of them fainted instantly after their arm exploded, some remained conscious but racked in pain, they took out the Golden Pain Medicine and silently applied on their wounds with their trembling hand. They then stood up and walked away without a word.

The excruciating pain from the exploded arm extended into the bone marrow and penetrated deep into their soul.

Yet they remained silent, hoping to prove that they were not cowards who were afraid to die, but heroes who chose to lose their arm.

That was their resolve.

But their bravery did not make the others feel any happier.

Looking at tens of people losing one of their arms in a split second, the other group of people couldn't help but shudder at the thought of what themselves might encounter.

Including Sir Qi who kept stressing his intention of becoming Chu Mo's guardian, he has now shut his mouth, and a self-deprecating grin spread across his face. He thought: Chu Mo has such a terrifying master, he surely doesn't need me to be his guardian. I have overestimated my own capability.

At this moment, an indifferent voice of Demon Lord resonated from the sky: "Sir Qi, I will transmit a scripture to you, as well as to unseal your dantian, so you are free to go. Whenever you have reached the state of Comprehending Intent, you may become one of my disciple's guardian. As of now, your state is inadequate..."

Chapter 175: Water Drips In The Cavern

WENG! (Droning sound from transmitting scripture to Sir Qi.)

Almost immediately, a loud gasp rose from the crowd.

Everyone, included those who have accepted Sir Qi's teachings in the past, gazed enviously at Sir Qi with indecipherable expressions.

One of them was too overwhelmed, he even started to murmur: "Good things happen to good people... I never accepted this belief, but my mind has now seen the light!"

"What goes around comes around, the payback is just a matter of time. I believe it now." Another man continued.

"Sir Qi has done good deeds throughout his life, and finally, he gets rewarded with the enlightenment from the high-power himself...As for us, we hold on to such nefarious purpose to pursue the so-called 'immense heritage' ... Great one, I have sinned, I beg for the punishment!"

"Great one! I too, ask to be punished!" Another man added.

BOOM! BOOM! BOOM!

Another string of explosions dispersed blood mist into the air, all of their right arms exploded into pieces.

Deafening cries could be heard from those who couldn't bear the pain.

Most of those men with one arm exploded didn't actually think that they had committed any wrongdoings nor genuinely wanted to accept any punishment. Deep down in their heart, they just wanted to push their luck, since the mysterious Demon Lord had the ability to distinguished kindness and enmity, they thought if they came clean and admitted their wrongdoings, perhaps their lives would be spared.

It turns out that they were completely wrong, the mysterious Demon Lord had no apathy upon their sincere or fake remorse. This situation had those bystanders caught between the devil and the deep sea.

On the other hand, Sir Qi was still sitting on the boulder, blankly gazing into the distance, seemingly set into deep thought. A while later, his face lit up with apparent joy, hurriedly kneeling on the boulder as he kowtowed three times to the sky: "I, Qi-Ping, will forever remember the enlightenment received from you!"

Sir Qi stood up and gazed on those repented men and their dismembered part, he sighed and shook his head, then he jumped up in one bound effortlessly which also revealed the true strength of Golden Stone State. After a few jumps, he disappeared before everyone's eyes.

These men, they deserved their punishment. Sir Qi initially

wanted to intercede for these people, but he understood even if he did, not only would it not work, it would most likely irritate Demon Lord.

In this case, what the eyes doesn't see, the heart doesn't grieve over. He decided he was better off going to other places to continue his cultivation.

When he became a master of Comprehending Intent State, he would go to Chu Mo and become his guardian. He thought that if he can't make someone a legend, he might as well witness the rise of a legend... Perhaps, that is a kind of a blessing in life.

Those repented men patched up their wounds with medicine and then walked away weakly.

In the end, less than three hundred people had chosen to stay.

Many of them were from different sects and associations across the Azure Dragon and Vermillion Bird continents.

Most of the men from the Azure Dragon Court and Vermillion Bird Association were either died or severely injured. Therefore, only very few of them stayed.

“Shit!” A middle-aged man from the Vermillion Bird continent cursed with his clenched teeth, then he continued: “You all have seen it yourself, at this point, we are out of options! Losing an arm and never have my strength unsealed... For me, this is definitely

worse than being dead! Thus, we only have one option left!”

As he spoke, he looked at the direction where Hua Quan Niu left, he continued to speak in his clenched teeth: “If Hua Quan Niu can choose to hike the mountain from the other direction, why can’t we? In one way or another, we have to get that heritage. In that way, at least we can exchange it for unimaginable wealth and resources!”

“Right, fight for it! I never want to have my arm dismembered, neither to stay sealed with the martial prowess in the Iron Bone state in all my life!”

“We should spread out, climb the mountain from a different direction! If that boy can climb the cliff, why can’t we? We all are equally in Iron Bone State, that make us no different! Don’t tell me his bones is harder than ours?”

“Right, there’s nothing to fear about! After all, one who risks nothing, gains nothing!”

After they encouraged each other, they then spreaded out to different directions but headed to the same destination – the Lone Peak.

As for the front side of the cliff, no one dared to challenge.

Hit by one another boulders and getting smashed by it instantly... losing one arm and restricted strength was a far better

option.

In the cavern, Chu Mo sat on the ground in a cross-legged position, his face was pale, almost bloodless.

His clothes was almost soaked up in fresh blood, but he was still wearing it. The wounds on his body no longer bled, as well as every strength within his dantian was long exhausted during the process of chipping boulders.

The crowd at the bottom of the cliff had treated him like he is a monster with the fearful threat, but in fact, Chu Mo was now an arrow at the end of its flight.

If Chu Mo revealed his current condition to the crowd, it would boost their confidence to attack, in that case, perhaps fewer people will choose to accept the punishment.

Nevertheless, with his current situation, any rank three martial prowess expert could defeat him easily, not to mention the rank four Iron Bone state masters.

Murdering Heaven Edge was currently inserted into the ground before Chu Mo, he was cultivating the Heaven's Will My Will.

The writing on Heaven's Will My Will had been extended ever since incessantly feeding it with bloody spirit aura.

Chu Mo kept concentrating on his cultivation, leaving behind the fact that his own master had unsealed Hua Quan Niu's strength and created an enormous crisis for him, which he was not angry about at all.

Because he understood that this was the real test! A real trial of strength!

The real meaning of a trial has to be associated with all kinds of tribulations. Otherwise, it would be considered as regular training, not a life or death test.

But what he least expected was, after he exhausted all the strength within his dantian, and the slight changes in Heaven's will My Will, his absorption speed on Ki has accelerated.

Although the air was thin at a higher altitude of the Lone Peak, the surrounding Ki was more than sufficient.

So when Chu Mo was cultivating Heaven's Will My Will, enormous Ki flowed into his body's meridians like the current in rivers.

In an instant, Chu Mo's 'dried up' dantian was infused with enormous energy.

Fuh!

After a cycle of the circulatory process, Chu Mo let out a long breath and slowly opened his eyes.

The strong sense of weariness and exhaustion were now completely gone.

Although the injuries on his body are fairly severe, Chu Mo had felt the distinct changes in his state, it had once again enhanced to the next level. It had improved from the intermediate phase to the highest phase of Iron Bone state!

Looking at the duration he had taken!

Even Chu Mo himself was shocked by the progression.

Drip Drop.

Behind him came the sounds of water drippings.

Chu Mo turned his head and look at the small quarry which he dug out earlier with the Murdering Heaven Edge. It was now filled with water.

The water was icy cold and a bit sweet in taste.

The cavern which he was currently located in was more than three hundred feet deep from the surface of the cliff. The cavern was the work of Chu Mo, it was formed when Chu Mo chipped out

the boulders to attack Hua Quan Niu.

After he had dug his way to his current location, water started to ooze out from nowhere. Chu Mo tasted the water, and he thought it was tasty which led to him digging out the small quarry to store the water.

Not knowing the situation outside of the cavern, Chu Mo prepared himself for a long term stay in the cavern.

The entrance of the cavern was blocked with a boulder, which would make any intruder noticeable and Chu Mo definitely able to sense the presence of the intruder in time.

Dong!

Dong!

When Chu Mo intended to get some water to drink, a sudden soft rattling noise came from the same direction where dripping sounds were heard.

Chu Mo immediately lifted his head up and looked at the direction of that rattling sound. He slightly squinted his eyes and stayed on full alert.

His placed his hand on the hilt of the Murdering Heaven Edge.

Once he sensed any danger, he would unleash a mighty swing of the Edge.

Chapter 176: The Vermillion Bird?

Dong!

Dong!

Chu Mo's vigilance didn't stop the noise from happening. Instead, it turned into a rapid staccato.

Dong! Dong! Dong!

Dong! Dong!

Dong! Dong! Dong! Dong! ...

Something was hitting the solid wall with all its might. Even the drippings were affected by it, sometimes there were waters oozing out or sometimes none at all.

“Could it be... a living thing in there?”

The corner of his mouth slightly twitched a little.

At the same time, the jade ornament that was resting still on his chest transmitted a sudden strong heat.

“ee?” Chu Mo's eyes glinted and at the same time he became

confounded by the sudden heat.

The jade he owned always had a substantial degree of sensitivity towards precious items. Like when he was on his way climbing up the cliff, his jade detected a few valuable medicinal herbal plants.

Anyhow, could a living thing exist within thousand feet deep inside the peak?

Wait, the Jade seems to have a slow respond this time.

Chu Mo was a little puzzled, as the noise gradually became rapid, he was wondering whether to dig up that spot...

At the same moment, the jade abruptly heated up like a red-hot iron and scalded his skin.

“Ouch, you’re killing me!” Chu Mo couldn’t stand the pain, and he yell. He tore off his shirt and looked at his chest to check the burns.

He didn’t even make a sound when he was being slashed many times so one could have imagined the degree of heat which he had experienced.

Along with Chu Mo’s loud cried, the noise halted.

Instant silence fall in the cavern.

Next, Chu Mo heard rumbling sounds resonates deep within the rocky wall. Like a giant creature trying to bore its way out of the wall.

Then, a strong sense of danger struck him.

Along with the rumbling sound, the hitting noise became aggressive.

Dong! Dong! Dong! Dong! ...

Chu Mo's mouth twitched a little, he subconsciously picked up the Murdering Heaven Edge and slashed on the area where sounds were denser...

WHOOSH!

CRICK, CRACKLING!

KERPLUNK!

A bunch of dark objects fell straight down to the small quarry.

Then, a great volume of water poured down like soaring waterfalls followed by the gust of piercing cold mist.

A creepy voice simultaneously rolled across the cavern from the deeper depth of the opening: “Argh! Argh! Argh...”

BOOM!

Along with the thunderous sound, a fiery red shadow and chunks of cobblestones rushed out from the opening.

Chu Mo, already in his defense mode, stood firmly in front of the quarry and levelled the Murdering Heaven Edge at a distance. His cold eyes fixed on the uninvited guest.

Next, Chu Mo was struck dumb.

The creature appearing before his eyes, fit amazingly to the descriptions of the legendary Vermillion Bird.

Sometime in the distant past, the myth and legends of four godly creatures which had mysteriously fallen from the Heaven to the World of Four Wonders were widely circulated, and they were the Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermillion Bird, and Black Tortoise.

When the four godly creatures appeared in the World of Four Wonders, they lost their mystical power. Nevertheless, the godly creatures’ incredibly majestic emanations kept the mortals away.

In a later time, these godly creatures left their own bloodlines in the World of Four Wonders. And their descendants later became the rank nine Yuan beasts inhabits across the four continents!

Whether or not that the myth is the factual recording of history, it certainly raised debates ever since.

However, it doesn't affect the fact that the four continents were respectively named after the four godly creatures, nor the image of the godly creatures instilled in everyone's mind from time immemorial.

Even an average child was familiarized to the image of the four godly creatures, not to mention Chu Mo who loves mythology.

Therefore, when a live Vermillion Bird appeared before his eyes, he was dumb in disbelief. He could not believe what he saw.

This was even more mind-blowing than the time when he discovered his master was from the Heaven Realm.

After all, the Heaven Realm was real, it was not a myth, it was not commonly known in the mortal world. But the myth of godly creatures was passed down generations by generations, it was deeply rooted in all generations before and perhaps coming.

Thus, when one of the mythical godly creatures unexpectedly appeared before one's eyes, even the martial prowess experts from the four secluded sects might be as dumbstruck as Chu Mo.

"Mortal." Said, the fiery-red Vermillion Bird after it stared quite a while at Chu Mo, it seems to have flames covering all of its body.

After a while, it suddenly said a word in the human language, it continued to stare at Chu Mo with its eyes that exposed its impeccable imperial vibe: “Leave now! You are not supposed to be here!”

It spoke in a condescending and magisterial tone along with an unquestionable aura.

“Why?” Chu Mo furrowed his brow and asked in reply.

“How dare you question me?” The flames on its body started to burn ferociously, emanating an impeccable magisterial pressure prevailing over Chu Mo.

Chu Mo could clearly see the rage flashing in its imperious gaze, it seemed to be provoked by Chu Mo’s question.

“Challenging me means seeking death upon yourself! You are no different than moles, crickets, and ants. Do you understand?” As it spoke, the flames on its body became extremely violent. It was like it was going to burn up from its beak to its claws. When the Vermillion Bird moved a few steps closer to Chu Mo, its grandiose coercion shadowed over Chu Mo like rolling dark clouds shrouding the sky.

Chu Mo couldn’t help but stagger a couple of steps backward. Again, the corner of his mouth slightly twitched.

If Chu Mo said that he was not intimidated by it, it was probably

a lie. The supercilious Vermillion Bird radiated with a sense of 'royal graciousness' that put everyone in awe of it. Even Chu Mo had never experienced such an auric field from the powerful Demon Lord.

However, regardless of the level of intimidation he now had in mind, he also felt aggrieved. Deep down in his heart, he has a sneaking feeling that something was off about the Vermillion Bird.

Chu Mo furrowed his brows to focus on his hunch, then subconsciously fixed his gaze on the opening where the Vermillion Bird came from. Immediately, his mind was clear about something.

Without hesitation, he transmitted his thought to the jade ornament.

"Jade, check on this creature, tell me what kind of bird it is?" Chu Mo began to raise suspicion on the 'Vermillion Bird.'

The 'royal graciousness' emanating from it... the magisterial eyes and the burning flames, everyone who looks at it will easily relate it to the Vermillion Bird from the legendary four godly creatures.

Here comes the problem, the way it makes its entrance is a bit outrageous!

It is, at any rate, a mythical godly creature!

Was it necessary to gnaw the rocky wall like a mouse and make its grand entrance like the way it did?

Furthermore, although its gaze was magisterial, somehow Chu Mo felt something guileful behind his gaze. He also had a hunch that the creature before him seemed to crave on the peculiar fishes in the small quarry behind him.

Of course, Chu Mo might have mistaken his hunch.

Nevertheless, the doubt planted in his heart started to bloom vigorously.

At the same time, he felt the apparent transmission of heat energy from the Jade, he then subconsciously peered into the Jade dimensional space.

Almost in a second, his mouth twisted.

The precious medicinal herbs supposedly kept in the Jade dimensional space were gone in a few moments... Poof, vanished!

Chu Mo wanted to cry but had no tear.

Then, the Jade transmitted a message to him.

Chapter 177: Giant Rooster

“Giant Rooster!”

Despite these two words, no other explanation was given by the magical jade!

Regardless the complexity of an object, it would reveal some results. Like the time when it examined his master’s illness, the results came back as:

State: Unknown

Physique: Unknown

Others: Unknown

But look at it now, the result was so brief and miserly.

What the hell, a ‘Giant Rooster’?

Chu Mo was stunned, disbelief shook him along with the quiver on the corner of his mouth.

Although he had his doubts on the identity of the so-called ‘Vermillion Bird,’ he never dreamed that he would encounter such a creature... the one ‘Giant Rooster’.

Ever seen a Giant Rooster bore through a hard-rocky wall?

Ever seen a Giant Rooster meaning to refer itself as ‘the esteemed one’?

Ever seen a Giant Rooster with ‘royal graciousness’ emanating along with a body full of flames, which made it reminiscent of the true Vermillion Bird.

A Giant Rooster... Chu Mo was certainly bewildered, even coming to suspect that the Jade which never failed to work its wonder might have actually just misread the creature.

What is a rooster? Chu Mo knew better. A common dish in the mortal world... Its recipes and cooking methods had been refined since hundred thousands of years ago.

Chicken soup, chicken stew, chicken braised mountain mushrooms, steamed chicken... you name it.

Especially the steamed chicken from Gluttonous Ogre, it was Chu Mo’s favourite dish.

Speaking of his favourite dish, he felt as if he was going to drool. He swallowed his own saliva, then turned to look at the Giant Rooster with malicious intentions dripping from his eyes.

“Scram! What are you waiting for? Waiting for the death from this almighty one that bad?!” The ‘Vermillion Bird’ (Ahem) Giant Rooster shouted in a stern voice, its body’s flames rising up even higher. The cavern was like a furnace due to the scorching heat exuded from the flame.

The peculiar fishes in the small quarry which now filled with water behind Chu Mo agitated by the heat, it struggled to find a way out. The small quarry dug by Chu Mo was deep enough, but it was also impermeable. Mass volumes of water from above had overflowed the small quarry, but the excess water was evaporated immediately due to the scorching heat from the Giant Rooster. Thus, the peculiar fishes were very trapped in this situation.

“Are you a true Vermillion Bird?” Chu Mo peered at the Giant Rooster, trying to look through its true identity. The Jade had given too little information, let alone its state.

Even if it was an ‘unknown’, it would be a grace!

Chu Mo pondered.

“How dare you question my true esteemed identity! Go to hell!” the Giant Rooster burst in anger. It threw its flames like thunder towards Chu Mo.

The heat wave struck Chu Mo instantly, and it shocked him. The temperature was similar to the lava within the volcanic vent. The more it got closer, the more he felt likely that he could be melted in any second.

However, Chu Mo was cornered, behind him was the small quarry, and behind it.....a thick rocky wall which Chu Mo has no idea about the density or thickness.

Thus, as desperate as Chu Mo was, he raised the Murdering Heaven Edge to attack it, a Soul Reaping technique swinging directly towards the Giant Rooster.

“Argh!” just after the Murdering Heaven Edge let out its breath, the Giant Rooster shrieked in horror: “Mur...Mur...Mur...Mur...Mur...Murdering Heaven Edge? O, Mother Heavens! Am I seeing it right? It was long destroyed! Why is it here?! That’s not possible... no, no, no, this is not happening, I must be hallucinating!”

Swoosh!

The Giant Rooster fled in an incredible speed to the opening where it came from. It disappeared into the tunnel...

Chu Mo was surprised and perplexed, he looked at the direction where the Giant Rooster disappeared and was utterly shocked.

Wise Demon Lord with extensive knowledge of just about everything, never knew the origin of the sword. Demon Lord thought Chu Mo must have had a great concurrence to get the world's only great Edge, the Edge didn't trigger any sort of knowledge from the Demon Lord.

However, the Giant Rooster's first reaction after it sensed the fume of the Murdering Heaven Edge, was to call out the Edge's name and flee after that.

Most importantly, the Giant Rooster mentioned one matter unintentionally, it said: It was long destroyed!

Its words made Chu Mo recalled the scene of the ten blood moons above the sky, he frowned as he pondered: Would it be possible that the Giant Rooster has some unimaginable past? If not, why would it recognize the edge? What is going on here?

Chu Mo was puzzled.

Wala-Wala

While he was in deep thought, a sound came behind him, from the small quarry which was now almost dried up.

Chu Mo turned his head to take a look, and he immediately rejoiced.

As the small quarry begin to dry up, forty to fifty scaleless dark fishes crowded together, each of them being more than one foot long.

Since so many fishes crowded together, one would think that the air would have some sort of a fish odour, but Chu Mo didn't catch any foul smell. Instead, a refreshing scent filled the air.

The phenomenon was unprecedented!

“Could the smell... come from those fishes?” He looked at those fishes with amazement. He then leaned closer to take a good smell at it. The refreshing scent was indeed coming from those fishes

“Good stuff!” Chu Mo couldn’t help but praise those fishes, “It is no wonder that the Giant Rooster wanted it so badly.”

The water flowed from above once again, pouring down to the small quarry. Thus, the water in the quarry gradually filled up.

Without further thought, Chu Mo waved his hands. He took the whole quarry and stored it in the Jade dimensional space.

Since the small tree which he kept in the space was still very much alive, he thought these fishes might as well stay alive.

Chu Mo couldn’t care less whether the experiment of putting living things in the space would work, he only knows that the fishes must worth some value, as this was an odd place for the fishes to have appeared. Furthermore, the Giant Rooster also apparently craved for them.

However, this was not the time to be juggling with the two matters.

Because the moment when Chu Mo stored all the fishes, the Giant Rooster reappeared.

“You, you, you... where did you keep all the fishes? Despicable human... you are disgraceful! Shameless! You’ve gone too far! It’s the Dragonfish... My Dragonfish! Give it back to me! Give it back to me!” The Giant Rooster which still remained as a disguise of the Vermillion Bird went nuts, it rushed towards Chu Mo with its claws and beaks wide opened.

“You got spooked away just now, didn’t you?” Chu Mo looked at the Giant Rooster and felt a bit speechless.

“Who said so? I, The Esteemed One, spooked away by your mortal kind? Your kind are no more than moles, crickets, and ants! Complete nonsense! I walked away for a while to attend to some unfinished business, and now I’m back!” the Giant Rooster astutely regained its imposing composure, trying to use its imperial gaze to repress Chu Mo.

Chu Mo glared at the Giant Rooster then he drew out the edge and let out a cold laugh.

When the Giant Rooster saw the Edge, the spark in its eyes changed, not a hint of dignity left in it. The Giant Rooster fixed its stares on the Murdering Heaven Edge for a while, then it held its head up and looked at Chu Mo, “Boy...Where did you get that Edge?”

“Why would I tell you?” Chu Mo replied, looking at the Giant

Rooster with his cold eyes. He continued, “If you really want to know, you have to tell me where you hail from!”

The Giant Rooster answered impassively, “The paintings of four godly creatures that passed down more than a thousand generations in your mortal world, have you seen it before?”

Chu Mo nodded.

“And you asked me who am I?” the Giant Rooster’s voice was once again filled with dignity, “Now that you have seen one of the four, shouldn’t you be kneeling down before me?!”

Chapter 178: Lord Rooster

Ha!

Chu Mo snorted and burst out laughing. He looked straight into the ‘Vermillion Bird’s’ magisterial gaze and waved the Murdering Heaven Edge. “Are you looking for another strike? I assume... with a size like yours, you could make many plates of steamed chicken.”

“How dare you!” The ‘Vermillion Bird’ angrily raised its voice. “Small fry mortal that is no different from an ant, do you really want to defy me, the esteemed one?”

“I am very curious,” said Chu Mo as he gazed at ‘The Vermillion Bird’, “Where did you gain your confidence, claiming to be the godly Vermillion Bird? Don’t you worry about the thunder of heaven’s wrath upon you?”

Bam!

‘The Vermillion Bird’ stomped the ground with its claws and took a huge step back, its eyes widened with shock. It stared fixedly at Chu Mo. “Mortal... what did you just say?”

“Didn’t I make myself clear? Giant Rooster!” Chu Mo looked sneeringly at the giant rooster, which was still trying to maintain its ‘Vermillion Bird’ image, “Honestly, I quite love barbecued chicken wing. “

“That’s not possible! It’s impossible! No, definitely not possible!” A tinge of panic flashed through the giant rooster’s eyes while it glared at him. “It’s impossible to discover my true identity. Tell me, how did you find out?”

“Well, can we both sit and have a calm conversation now?” Chu Mo glanced at the Edge he held.

The giant rooster once again took two steps back, saying, “Why would I want to talk with a mortal?”

Meanwhile, the giant rooster continued to search for the fish, but it didn’t see any. Then it raised its voice in anger again. “It took more than a decade to catch those fish, and you took all of them! Boy, aren’t you greedy? Don’t you know the common saying? Split the kill...?” (Chinese saying: If a hunter takes down another hunter’s prey, then both hunters should divide the kill.)

“...” Chu Mo was puzzled. He studied the giant rooster. The way he acted and spoke... It was exactly like a thug that played along with human rules, which was completely different from its imposing figure.

“What? Just because you found out who I am doesn't mean you get to use it against me.” An unexpected jeer shone from its eyes as it looked at Chu Mo. “Naïve little young man. If I, the Lord Rooster, claim my speed as the second best in all realms, especially in this damn mortal realm, no one would claim to be first, and I am not exaggerating!”

“You mean the speed of turning tail?” Chu Mo deadpanned while stared at the giant rooster.

The giant rooster was first abashed by his words, then it became furious, “Boy, you don’t know what you’re saying! Take back your words immediately! I am the Lord Rooster, not a little chicken!”

Chu Mo infused his inner force into the Murdering Heaven Edge.

Weng!

Reverberating, droning sounds along with exploding murderous intent exuded from the Edge.

Swoosh!

At an incredible speed, the giant rooster became a flash of fire and once again disappeared into the opening.

A while later, the giant rooster’s head snuck out from the opening and glared at Chu Mo: “Boy, put that toy of yours away if you wish to have a decent conversation!”

Chu Mo smirked, then put the Edge into the Jade dimensional space.

The giant rooster let out a gasp of relief before it reemerged from the opening. The giant rooster spread out its wings, and with a few

flaps, it magically revealed its true form — an imposing god-like rooster with bright plumage!

Its stature was not any less than its ‘Vermillion Bird’ disguise.

Stupefied at its majestic looking figure, Chu Mo murmured, “Truly one giant rooster.”

“Boy, don’t provoke me! In my body is a noble bloodline which is far superior to the Vermillion Bird! The Phoenix bloodline! Get it? Have you even heard of a Phoenix?” The giant rooster angrily pointed one of its wings at Chu Mo.

“If so, why bother transforming into the Vermillion Bird?” Chu Mo reluctantly asked.

“The reason is you mortals! A bunch of thoughtless imbeciles! I am forced to do so because your kind has only heard of the Vermillion Bird.” The giant rooster became a little crestfallen after it stated its reason.

“You are not from this realm?” Chu Mo asked.

“What a silly question! I, Lord Rooster, come from this realm?” The giant rooster start to strut across the ground as it fretted about the question. “It’s all because of that damn Edge you possess! Otherwise, a great Lord Rooster like me... Ahem, the-most-brilliant-and-handsomest-throughout-all-realms-and-history, the ace rooster! How could an ace like me end up in this damn place if

not because of that Edge?”

“...” Not knowing what to say, Chu Mo asked, “Are you level nine Yuan beast?”

It is known from legends that high-level Yuan beasts throughout the four continents are very intelligent, as they have the bloodlines of godly creatures, and that is why they speak the mortal language. Chu Mo had never seen one before; he had only heard it from his grandfather, who claimed that the legend was indeed true.

There were not many records regarding level nine Yuan beasts in the four continents. Perhaps only ten or more kinds were described. Chu Mo had no idea about the existence of other level nine Yuan beasts who had not been discovered yet.

After all, the world was too big to know.

There were still plenty of unknown territories that had yet to be explored.

“You compare me with a level nine Yuan beast? Those beasts have to kneel before the Lord Rooster! That is me!” The giant rooster said boastfully along with a smug grin, “I came from... I came from... Why should I tell you where I came from?”

“Fine, I don’t have to know where you came from, but can you tell me the story of the Murdering Heaven Edge? In return, I will give you one fish!” Chu Mo asked.

“Those fish are supposed to be my snack! My snack! Do you understand, boy? They are mine!” The giant rooster glared stormily at Chu Mo. “You are the one who robbed me of my possession! This is purely pseudo-generosity!”

“So, you don’t want it?” As he asked, Chu Mo stolidly looked at the giant rooster.

“I want!” The giant rooster answered without a second delay. Such shallow fortitude made Chu Mo think. He was unsure whether it was the right call to communicate with it.

“Then tell me the background of the Murdering Heaven Edge.” Chu Mo demanded.

“I can’t.” Said the giant rooster as its eyes flashed with terror. “I don’t mean to be difficult, boy. If you were wise, you would throw away that Edge.”

“Throw away?”

“Yes, throw away!” The giant rooster put on its straight face as it spoke. “The Edge you possess, it brings forth evil.”

“Why?”

“I can’t tell you.” The giant rooster solemnly looked at Chu Mo.

“I am serious, and I am warning you sincerely. The Edge will bring you devastation!”

“That’s not for me to worry about right now.” Chu Mo replied calmly.

“Suit yourself then.” Not happy with his response, the giant rooster quietly looked at Chu Mo while pondering. It then said, “I can tell you a little about it...”

“Go ahead.” Chu Mo still had his gaze fixed on the giant rooster.

“But you have to promise me...”

“A fish, I know.” Chu Mo finished its sentence, urging it to start.

“I’m afraid those fish are now dead. Boy, a storage ring is not meant for living things. You are too dumb. Dead Dragonfish do not taste good. They can only fill the stomach.” Some level of disappointment is clearly expressed in its eyes.

“They are still very much alive.” Chu Mo said in a calm manner.

“Alive?” The giant rooster jerked its head up. It widened an eye to peer closer at Chu Mo, then it questioned him in disbelief. “Did you said those fish are alive now? You, you, you... A mortal like you owns a high-class storage ring?”

As it spoke, it slapped its wing on its head as a thought seemingly flashed through its mind. With the sudden realization, it said, “No wonder... I can’t sense any Murdering Heaven Edge’s qi from you. I see now... you have that thing with you too. Which means... The chaos furnace... is also with you?”

Chapter 179: The Heaven's Divination Mirror

“What’s ‘that thing’? What’s the Chaos Furnace?” Chu Mo looked at the giant rooster, perplexed.

“That thing...” The giant rooster swallowed the rest of its words and begin to study Chu Mo from top to bottom. “Boy... are you really an average man? Why do I feel like you’re a bastard son of the Emperor of Heaven Realm?”

Despite the random nonsense which Chu Mo chose to ignore, he was intrigued by its words, as this was the first time he had heard of the term ‘Emperor of the Heaven Realm.’

Even his master, Demon Lord, was never quite familiar with the Heaven Realm, but somehow this giant rooster knows it. How is it talking about the Heaven Realm so easily?

Furthermore, the information didn’t sound fabricated at all; even if it was all false, it shouldn’t be easy to invent such crazy lies, right?

While Chu Mo was analyzing the authenticity of the giant rooster’s words, he reached his hands into the Jade dimensional space and casually picked out a fish from the small quarry. To his surprise, the one foot plus, dark, scaleless fish was extraordinarily strong, so he struggled a little during the catching process.

That incredible strength was on par with his.

“I’m not surprised that the wall-hitting noises are caused by the fish. It’s such small creature, but has such Herculean strength!” Chu Mo exclaimed.

The giant rooster’s eyes lit up as soon as it saw the fish. However, when it overheard Chu Mo’s exclamation, it scornfully said, “You know nothing! The fish has become so weak, abiding by nature’s rule in this world. If it’s in the Heaven Realm, don’t dream of catching one in your current state!”

“So, they are valuable?” Chu Mo asked randomly.

“Of course! I, the esteemed Lord Rooster, do not exaggerate...” But it stopped itself before finishing its sentence as Chu Mo took back the fish which he had almost handed out. “Actually... it’s not that valuable though...”

Chu Mo rolled his eyes at the giant rooster. He looked at it disdainfully with don’t-you-lie-to-me expression on his face.

With a little embarrassment, the giant rooster said, “Alright, if you give it to me, I’ll reveal more secrets about the Edge, the mirror, and that furnace of chaos. But before I say anything, I can’t guarantee my information is all the truth!”

Chu Mo nodded and tossed the struggling dragonfish to the giant rooster. “Whatever it is, tell me.”

The giant rooster managed to catch the dragonfish with its beak. Oddly enough, the dragonfish stopped struggling the moment it was caught, like it was surrendering to its natural enemy. Without further thought, the giant rooster swallowed the fish.

After a satisfying burp, the giant rooster turned its focus to Chu Mo. “About the Edge, it is called the Murdering Heaven Edge. Nobody knows its true origin. But according to legend, the Edge was created naturally by Heaven and Earth at the beginning of time. It is the world’s number one killing weapon! Whether that’s true or false, it’s hard to say. Even I, the esteemed Lord Rooster, have no idea about it. But one thing’s for sure; it was bathed in the Emperor’s blood in Heaven Realm.”

“The Emperor of Heaven Realm?” Chu Mo asked, with his eyes fixed to the giant rooster.

“The strongest existence ever known in the Heaven Realm. The Emperor!” The giant rooster glanced at Chu Mo then it continued. “At one point in history, a massive rebellion between a hundred tribes rose in the Heaven Realm. Thus, the Edge resurfaced, and along followed a massive, bloody killing spree. The Edge became seeped so many of the high-powers’ blood that many masters in Heaven Realm died trying to own it. And this is why it attracts damnation. Whoever’s got it has their life shortened!”

The giant rooster paused a little and gloated over Chu Mo. “All that’s left now is a fragmented piece of the Edge. But never underestimate it, as it still looks ominous to me! So, good luck.”

“A fragment?” Chu Mo frowned, slightly. “You mean it is not whole?”

“Of course, it isn’t!” The giant rooster let out a cold sneer. “If it was in one whole piece, do you really think you could lift it up in your current state? Don’t even dream about it!”

Chu Mo furrowed as he drew out the Edge to check on it.

The giant rooster took two steps back. Alarmed, it growled, “Why on earth did you take that thing out?”

“Just take a look, alright. ” Chu Mo rolled his eyes at the giant rooster. He studied the Edge carefully, then he said, “It looks perfect and whole to me!”

“What part did you not understand?” The giant rooster derided him. “Numerous masters have fought tirelessly for this Edge; it broke into pieces during that time. Some high-powers even speculate that the body of the Edge has broken into three fragments. However, no one has managed to locate their locations. So, with the Edge fragmented into three pieces, the soul within also disappeared.”

“The soul within the Edge?” Chu Mo once again furrowed.

“This is the part which you’ll never understand! Such godly weapons naturally bond with a sainted soul!” The giant rooster glanced scornfully at Chu Mo. “You know absolutely nothing.

Nothing, idiot. I don't understand why the Murdering Heaven Edge chose you?"

"The Edge wanted me?" Chu Mo looked at the giant rooster, puzzled.

"If you're not the chosen one... even if it's in front of you, you'll never notice it!" Before the giant rooster continued, it shot a disdainful glance at him. "In the past, a mysterious master tried to repress the Edge by using the legendary banned apparatus – born the same day as the Edge during the begin of time, the Heaven's Divination Mirror!"

"The Heaven's Divination Mirror?"

"Yes, the Divination Mirror. Its value is inestimable. It can appraise anything in every realm, including human! It can restore any form of martial or mystical arts! As it is said that the Divination Mirror is the incarnation of the Great Dao! Every aspect of martial and mystical arts can never escape the law of the Great Dao." The giant rooster observed every expression on Chu Mo's face as it spoke.

However, Chu Mo clueless face raised some doubts in the giant rooster's mind. It started to wonder, 'Is it possible that the Divination Mirror is not with him? But I heard that the Murdering Heaven Edge and the Divination Mirror disappeared together.'

The giant rooster didn't mention the mirror at first but later revealed it according to what it contemplated.

The giant rooster possessed no interest towards the Murdering Heaven Edge as it would bring damnation. But the Heaven's Divination Mirror... that was what it yearned for! That great mirror was the world's most mystifying and unique treasure.

If anyone possessed the Divination Mirror, that person would own the chance to all riches in the world, literally!

Chu Mo's inexpressive face was a disguise that he learned throughout cultivations with Demon Lord. In fact, his state of mind was like a rogue wave.

The Heaven's Divination Mirror... So, my Jade ornament is the Heaven's Divination Mirror! It appraises every and anything in every realm, including human! No wonder it can analyze people's state effortlessly. It's from the Heaven Realm! It restores any form of martial or mystical arts, no wonder it automatically completed the Heaven's will, My will scripture to the perfect stage. So this is it!

Despite the rolling, wavering thoughts in his mind, he still looked cluelessly at the giant rooster. "And then?"

"And then what?" When the giant rooster assumed that the mirror wasn't with Chu Mo, it acted unenthusiastically. "The master who intended to repress the Murdering Heaven Edge with the Divination Mirror fought night and day until the ten Heaven's stones from the Divination Mirror scattered and vanished."

The image of ten bloody moons instantly flashed through Chu Mo's mind!

He also recalled that when the Murdering Heaven Edge appeared from the Jade, it slashed the ten bloody moons and merged the ten blood moons into one giant blood moon.

The giant rooster sighed. "The two were legendary weapons! It was a shame when both of them were destroyed."

Chapter 180: The Chaos Furnace

As he looked at the giant rooster, Chu Mo asked, “That Chaos Furnace you were talking about... what is it?”

“The Chaos Furnace belongs to the ‘God of Alchemy,’ the Emperor of Heaven Realm, who uses it to practice alchemy. It is said that the furnace is a treasure formed naturally when chaos first coalesced in the universe. Legend says that not only can it be used to concoct Alchemy pills, it can even be used to concoct the sky, ka-ka,” the giant rooster gloated, “Back then, the Emperor also joined the fight of Murdering Heaven Edge, but not only did he not earn anything, he even lost his treasure during that fight. Ka-ka-ka-ka!”

Chu Mo thought of that huge emerald rock between the Jade’s dimensional space that could concoct almost any kind of Alchemy pills and was able to provide the prescription directly. It could even adjust the prescription automatically according to one’s specifications.

So that huge emerald rock was actually the Chaos Furnace, and a sacred object!

This discovery made Chu Mo both excited and yet, a little speechless. And at the same time, deep down his heart, his emotions were muddled.

According to what the giant rooster said, the Murdering Heaven Edge, the Divination Mirror, and the Chaos Furnace were all really

powerful tools in the Heaven Realm. They were all ranked as one of the ten most powerful tools. As for Murdering Heaven Edge, even the leaders of the Heaven's realm would do anything in order to get it, as its value has surpassed all of the ten powerful tools.

However, these three sacred objects had all fallen to him.

The Divination Mirror turned into a common-looking jade, and he was wearing it all this while; the Chaos Furnace became an ordinary huge emerald rock; the Murdering Heaven Edge was hidden in the jade's dimensional space, and it reappeared after he bumped into a mysterious dimension located somewhere at that prairie.

That is to say, any one of the three was a sacred object that could literally set off a bloody war, and he was carrying them all this time.

Chu Mo's heart quivered when he recalled that he was an orphan, and he asked himself, 'Who am I?'

Chu Mo had asked himself this question many times, but never had his heart trembled like this.

"Why are all these sacred tools appearing in front of me?"

Chu Mo's heart was twisting, but he didn't show any of it outwardly, and instead nodded his head. "These are good treasures!"

“Hey, you ordinary man, you don’t even understand what entails the treasures.” The giant rooster raised its eyelids and glared at Chu-Mo for a short while, then it asked, “The Edge, how did you get it?”

Chu-Mo thought for a while, and said, “Last year, when I left home to gain life experience, I came across this big prairie. There were many people trying to find something there. They said there was a Chamber of God on the prairie.”

“Jeez!” The giant rooster sneered and said, “Chamber of God? In this desolate place? What kind of joke is this?”

Chu Mo got annoyed and stared at the giant rooster. “No matter how lousy this place is, you’re still here, right?”

“Uh...” The giant rooster was speechless and it smiled embarrassingly, “Alright, go on, continue talking. Chamber of God it is.”

Chu Mo rolled his eyes and continued. “My luck was better back then, and I bumped into it accidentally. But I didn’t know that it wasn’t the Chamber of God at all, but a mysterious space. I stood in the middle and saw ten red moons aligned in the sky.”

“Ten moons in the sky? Red ones?” The giant rooster’s eyes brightened, and a little excited, it asked, “Is that true?”

Chu Mo nodded his head.

The giant rooster urged him on. “And, what happened next? Please, tell me quickly!”

“And then, these ten blood-red moons merged together became one moon in the sky. They grew larger and larger in the sky, almost filling up the whole space,” Chu Mo slyly told the giant rooster, as he observed its expressions.

The giant rooster didn't seem to hide any of its emotions; maybe it didn't even think of hiding anything. All sorts of complex emotions flashed through its eyes, in it, there were nostalgic and sorrowful, raging memories.

“After that, there was beam of blood red light, I had no idea where that light came from. It just cut through those supersized, blood-red moons,” Chu-Mo reminiscenced. His eyes carried some fear in them. “Then I fainted, I didn't know what happened after that. When I woke up, I was on the prairie again, with an Edge by my side. It was Murdering Heaven Edge.

“I see,” The giant rooster spoke, with relief on its face. Then it said, “Most probably you fell into the gate of memory.”

“Gate of memory?”

“It is some kind of shard of time, it's all very mysterious and incredible. I'm not really sure about it myself. But, if you fall into

the gate of memory, you get to experience some really ancient happenings. You can even see scenes where those philosophers are preaching, and gain a lot of wisdom from there. An opportunity like that is really hard to encounter,” the giant rooster told Chu Mo. “You fell into the gate of memory, and you brought the Edge back from there?”

Chu Mo only have a hazy notion of what it said.

Then the giant rooster continued. “The Heaven Realm was at war long ago and caused havoc in the world. Murdering Heaven Edge broke into pieces, as well as the Divination Mirror, then the Chaos Furnace disappeared... the shattered pieces pierced through the Heaven realm, the Immortal realm, the Spiritual realm, and all other realms, which it explained the reason why you got the part of the Edge from the prairie, it is the part that pierced through the Heaven realm and fell on this world during the ancient time.”

“The ancient time...” Chu Mo mumbled softly, and then he looked at the giant rooster, continued. “And you? How do you know so much about this? Are you... from the Heaven Realm?”

Giant rooster shrugged and turned its head away. “I am not going to tell you.”

Chu Mo smiled and said, “You’ve told me so many things, but now you won’t tell me this? Isn’t it a little too late? You think that I can’t guess that you are from the Heaven Realm?”

“You cunning little brat!” The giant rooster did not admit nor

deny, it only took a look at Chu Mo and said, “Luckily, not many mortal know about the existence of the Murdering Heaven Edge, but I’m not so sure about the Spiritual and Immortal realms. However, if you happen to drop by the Heaven Realm, you will then understand what entails by showing off the Edge.”

Chu Mo twitched his lips, he thought, ‘Qi Xiao Yu must be in the Spiritual Realm. Her clone is here for a reason. One day when I transcended to the Spiritual Realm, I would have to help her, when that time come, I assume no challenges will be any less than what I’m facing now; If I manage well in the Spiritual Realm and transcended to the Immortal Realm, the martial technique I maneuver will giving out my identity, as well as my master’s, but it’s naturally my duty to avenge for my master... in other words even if I’m in the Immortal Realm, neither place will give me peace. Even if I am exceptionally gifted and possess extreme luck to overcome all challenges to get my way to the Heaven Realm... there are only more worser situation for me to deal with!

Most of all, I have three sacred objects which all lords in Heaven Realm would kill for.

Why do I get the feeling that this world are the only place which I can stay peacefully compare to all other realms?’

“But kid, how did you get here in the first place? You’ve even stolen all of my snacks?” The giant rooster scowled and looked at Chu Mo.

“I am travelling everywhere, trying to gain more life experience,” Chu Mo said calmly.

“So you’re not being hunted down by someone?” The giant rooster’s eyes were sardonically smiling.

“Of course not.” Chu Mo retained his composure.

The giant rooster mock Chu-Mo with his freakish laugh. “Then what business does the powerful man have here?”

A thunderous noise came from the outside of the cavern’s opening which Chu Mo had blocked with a huge boulder, as if to reaffirm the giant rooster’s indications.

Boom!

The whole rocky mountain is shaking.

Chapter 181: Raging Hua Quan Niu

“Hua Nan’s old man! ...That old freak!” Chu Mo’s face darkened. After all the efforts of chipping and throwing boulders, none of it can kill Hua Quan Niu, instead only to knock him off the cliff. Now, Hua Quan Niu has reached Chu Mo’s current location with surprising speed, his conviction to kill Chu Mo is terrifying to no extent!

“Boy, looks like you’re a no match to him,” The giant rooster leered at Chu Mo, “Would you, perhaps, need my assistance?”

“You? Offering me a hand?” Chu Mo looked askance at the giant rooster’s lecherous look, he clearly doubted its offers.

“What’s the meaning of this? Do you know my ranks and positions? Me, the esteemed Lord Rooster! Why would I waste my time to bluff on a small potato like you?” provoked by Chu Mo’s rude attitude, the giant rooster glared with its eyes wide open to him.

“You can’t even fight me!” Chu Mo openly exposed its weakness without hesitation.

“I fear the Edge you held!” raged the giant rooster, “you think I’m afraid of you? What a fool!”

“How do you plan to help me then?” sneered Chu Mo.

The giant rooster raised its wing and point at the opening, which was where it appeared in the first place, “you can worm into that tunnel!”

“You call this helping?” Chu Mo is angry but later burst out laughing at its silly idea, “So, you want me to crawl through that tunnel, and you expect that man will not chase after me?”

“Of course, he will!” the giant rooster deadpanned, “Quit looking at me like that, why, you think I have a chicken brain? I will stand guard after you leave! My imposing force will certainly scare him off!”

“What’s after that?” Chu Mo asked.

The giant rooster grinned, “You’ll understand when you reached the end of the tunnel! I assure you, even the world’s most powerful man will not go near that place, much less a mortal!”

“Please speak human language, the language I understand!” Chu Mo frowned.

“I am never a human, I am the Lord Rooster!” the giant rooster replied him with a cold stare, “The tunnel will lead you to a Dragon cave! It was once a cultivation space for the Azure Dragon, understand? It’s an excellent place for cultivators! Now, I offer this place to you, how will you thank me? How many Dragonfish are you going to offer me?”

“...” Chu Mo quietly looked at the giant rooster, “Tell me, why no one can get near to the Dragon Cave? If no one can get near, what makes you think I can?”

“Are you dumb? Can you focus on the situation? Argh, you caused me a headache! The Edge which you’re holding, nothing in this world can suppress it! If the actual nature of the cursed Edge were ever evoked, even if it released a tinge of murderous qi, it will exterminate anything comes in the way!” said irritably by the giant rooster, “You are not an ordinary human, others cannot stay near that cave! The pressure and force emitting from the Dragon Cave are enough to suffocate them! If an average person forcibly entered the cave, their body will crush into flying ashes and smoldering smoke!”

“So, I won’t end up like that?” Chu Mo narrowed his eyes trying to peer through the giant rooster’s intentions. He is doubtful for the giant rooster’s act of kindness.

“Fine, stay! You think I really care to help you? All I care is your storage ring that can store living fish! If you stay alive I won’t have any hassle to eat my snack whenever I want!” raged the giant rooster.

“You want to stay beside me? You want to be my pet?” Chu Mo finally realized its intention.

“Pet your ass!” the giant rooster stamp its claws and throwing tantrums at Chu Mo, “I’m the one should keep you as a pet! Shoo, shoo, shoo, I don’t want to help you anymore! Go face the man who is powerful than you, alone!”

Chu Mo chuckled, “Don’t be mad, you just want to be at my side from now on, don’t you? Why not? Indeed, my storage ring can store live fish, not only they can be stored... they can be breed as well! Speaking of which, the fish here has become less and lesser, and no longer able to fill your stomach. Furthermore, mortals here have fixed their eyes on the fish too, right? Sometimes, there are one or two men with no fear of death would fight for this fish, which you are also helpless in this situation, right?”

Expression of dismay exposed on the giant rooster’s face, it chose to ignore Chu Mo and turn its head away.

BOOM!

BAM!

The booming noise gradually became louder, which indicated the distance gradually shortened.

Apparently, Hua Quan Niu has become mad by wanting so much to avenge his son, he couldn’t care about anything anymore.

Chu Mo took a glance at the giant rooster and draw a deep breath. He decided to trust the rooster. Although the opening above the giant rooster seems narrow, it’s not difficult for Chu Mo to worm in.

After Chu Mo entered the tunnel, he crawls forward at an

average pace. He found out that the wall of the tunnel is somewhat smooth which raises his curiosity about the way the tunnel was formed. Because the tunnel was undoubtedly dug by the giant rooster.

“Hey, giant rooster. How did you dig out this tunnel?” Chu Mo asked in a soft voice.

“What do you mean?” the giant rooster’s indifferent voice came behind Chu Mo, but he actually heard its voice directly resounded in his mind.

“The tunnel was burrowed recently by you, right? The surface of the wall is smooth, why?” Chu Mo also sends his message to the giant rooster telepathically.

“O, the wall. You really thought the flame from my body is just a projection, right?” The giant rooster replied in pride of its own work.

Meanwhile, Chu Mo heard some large booming sounds not far behind him. After a loud bang, the roaring voice of Hua Quan Niu resounded the tunnel, “Bastard! Where can you hide now!”

“Chu Mo! Chu Mo! Stop hiding and prepare to die!”

“Where are you? You must be hiding somewhere! There’s no other exit here!”

The raging Hua Quan Niu dragged his injured body and stand at where Chu Mo stood earlier. Hua Quan Niu studied the vast cavern and roared furiously.

It is not an easy task even to climb up from another side of the peak. During the climb, Hua Quan Niu encountered a rank six Yuan Beast.

It was a rank six gray eagle!

Maybe Hua Quan Niu's climbing route was near to the gray eagle's nest, and perhaps that's the reason why his body is full of injuries, he must have suffered from the gray eagle's attacked.

Although Hua Quan Niu's martial state is higher than the gray eagle, his range of activities was restricted on the cliff, he can't move freely as he does on the ground. Under the furious attacked of the eagle, dangers lurking on all sides, he has to burn out his inner strength to let out a powerful strike which hurt the eagle and eventually the eagle flew away.

After the eagle flew away, the inner force in him has dissipated to a dangerous extent, worst still, the injuries caused by the eagle are still bleeding.

Finally, when he reached Chu Mo's hiding place, he found out the opening of the cavern was blocked by a giant boulder. Hua Quan Niu instantly enraged and bombarded the boulder with all his might, he doesn't care whether his actions will alert Chu Mo about his presence.

With his forceful might, he finally smashed the boulder and eventually clear out the exit.

However, he immediately realized Chu Mo is not in the cavern.

The frustrations and anger make Hua Quan Niu gone mad.

After Hua Quan Niu studies around the cavern, he noticed an average sized opening above him, he couldn't hold his anger and grit his teeth, "I see now, burrow the hole like a mouse! Bastard, I shall see where will you end up!"

As he speaks, he jumped up to the opening and crawl his way in the tunnel with an incredibly insane speed.

After a while of crawling, his body shaken suddenly by a force of pressure, it was like a strong current flushed against him.

Hua Quan Niu instantly became limp and feeble due to the sudden force, horrify, aghast reactions rayed out at each corner of his eyes.

